

P. o. angl.

15²
7

P. o. angl.

Higgins

157

<36630664160017

<36630664160017

Bayer. Staatsbibliothek



THE
Mirour for Magistrates,
wherein may bee scene,
by
examples passed in this
Realme with
how greuous plagues vices are puni-
shed in great Princes and Magistrates:
and how fraile and vnstable worldly
prosperity is found, where For-
tune seemeth most highly
to fauour.

PART I.

By JOHN HIGGINS.

[Reprinted from the edition of 1587, collated
with those of 1575 and 1610.]

60

ONE AND TWO

TO THE
TY AND ALL OTHER IN
OFFICE

BIBLIOTHECA
REGIA
MONACENSIS

Amongst the wise (right Honourable) Philosophers (for
the most parts) tends either to teach the attaining of vertues
or eschewing of vices. Plinius that wonderful and excellent Plinian
Philosopher hath these words: The property of Temperance
is to keep nothing which may be increased, not to
exceed the bounds of measure, & to keep it under the
yoke of Reason. Which saying it were so well known
as it is needfull; so well embraced, as it is wished; or so
surely fixed in minds, as it is printed in his works: then
certis many Christians might by the instruction of an Ethicke
Philosopher, shun great and dangerous temptations. For to
confer without consideration to pass the measure of his degree
and to let will run at random, is the only destruction of
all estates. Else how were it possible, so many learned
politicks, wise, renowned, valiant, and victorious personages
might ever have come to such vntimely deaths? For example wee
have Alexander the Great, Caesar, Pompey, Cato, Cato, Cato, Cato
&c. All which (by desire of glory) follow the reward of their
immoderate and insatiable lusts: for if Alexander had beene
content with Macedonic, or not become puffed up with pride after
his triumph, he had never bene so miserably poisoned. If
Caesar and Pompey had bene satisfied with their victories, and

Hee hath
B 9

Loue and liue.

TO THE NOBILITY
AND ALL OTHER IN
OFFICE, GOD GRAUNT THE IN-

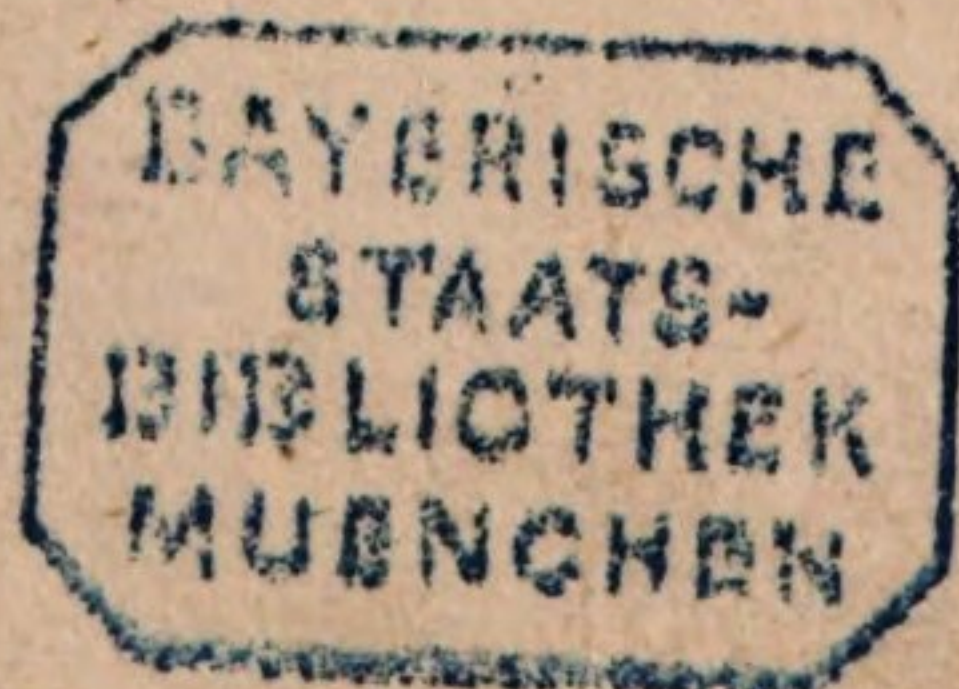
crease of wisdom, with all thinges necessary
for preservation of theyr estates.

Amen.

AMONGSTE the wise (right Honorable) whose sentences (for the moste parte) tende either to teache the attayning of vertue or eschuing of vice, *Plotinus* that wonderfull and excellent *Plotinus.* Philosopher hath these wordes: The property of Temperance is to couet nothing which may be repented: not to excede the bands of measure, & to kepe Desire vnder the yoke of Reason. Whiche saying if it were so well knowen, as it is nedefull; so well embraced, as is¹ wished; or so surely fixed in minde, as it is printed in his workes: then certis many Christians might by the instruction of an Ethnicke Philosopher, shun great and daungerous perils. For to couet without consideration, to passe the measure of his degree, and to let will run at randon, is the only destruction of all estates. Else howe were it possible, so many learned, polliticke, wise, renoumed, valiaunt, and victorious personages, might euer haue come to such vtter decay? For example, wee haue² *Alexander* the Great, *Cæsar*, *Pompey*, *Cyrus*, *Hannibal*, *Quintus Curtius.* &c. All which (by desier of glorie) felte the reward of their immoderate and insatiable lustes: for if *Alexander* had beene content with Macedonie, or not beene puffed vp with pride after his triumphes, hee had neuer beene so miserably poysoned. If *Cæsar* and *Pompey* had beene satisfied with their victories, and

¹ Hee. edit. 1575.

² Will you that I rehearse. ib.



Iustinus
lib. 1.

Plutar-
chus.
Liuius.
Polibius.

Arist.
Cicero.
Prudence.

had not fell to ciuill discention, the one had not beene slaine in the senate with daggers, nor the other abroad, by their frendes procurement. If *Cyrus* had beene pleased with all Persia, and Media, and not thirsted for bloud, hee had neuer com to so infortunate a fall. So if *Hanniball* had not so much delited in glorie of warfare, his coūtrei had neyther fell in ruine, nor hee bene miserably forced to poyson himselfe. But you will say, desire of fame, glorie, renowne, and immortalitie (to which all men well nighe by³ nature are inclined, especially those which excell or haue any singuler gift of fortune or⁴ the body) moued them to such daungerous, great, and hardy enterprises, which must needs be confessed⁵ as an infallible veritie: and therefore I suerly⁶ deeme those Princes aboue specified (cōsidering their⁷ fortunes, fame, and exploytes) had neuer come to suche ende, but for wante of temperance. And now⁸ sithe there are three other Cardinall vertues which are requisite in him that should bee in authoritye: that is to saye, Prudence, Iustice, and Fortitude, which so wonderfully adorne and beautifie all estates (If Temperaunce bee with them adioyned, that they moue the very enemies with admiration to prayse them) some peraduenture (as affection leades) will commend one, some another: as⁹ *Aristotle* the Prince of Philosophers names Prudence, the mother of vertues, but¹ *Cicero* defines her the knowledge of things which ought to bee desired and followed, and also of them which ought to bee fled and eschewed; yet you shall finde that for want of Temperaunce, some which were coūted very wise² fell into wonderfull reproche and infamy. But³ Iustice that incomparable vertue, (as the aun-cient Ciuilians define her) is⁴ a perpetuall and constant will

³ Of. ib.

⁴ Of. ib.

⁵ Which must I needs be confesse. ib.

⁶ Veritie: [but for so much as the above named virtue by Plotinus his iudgement hath such excellent properties it is so fit in a Magistrate, that] I surely &c. ib.

⁷ Facts estates fortunes. ib.

⁸ Yet. ib.

⁹ Yea and though. ib.

¹ And. ib.

² Those whiche were counted the wisest that ever were. ib.

³ Yea and though. ib.

⁴ Be. ib.

The Epistle Dedicatorie. 5

which giueth to euery man his right, yet if shee be not constant, which is the gifte of Fortitude; nor equal in discerning right from wrong, wherein is Prudence; nor vse proportion in iudgement and sentence, which pertayneth to Temperaunce: shee can neuer bee called equitie or iustice, but fraude, deceite, iniustice and iniurie. And, to speake of Fortitude, which *Cicero* defineth, a cōsyderate vndertaking of perills, and enduring of labours; if he whome wee suppose stoute, valiaunt, and of good courage, want Prudence, Iustice, or Temperaunce, he is not coūted wise, righteous and constant, but sottish, rude and desperate. For Temperaunce (sayth *Cicero*) is of reason⁵ in lust and other euell assaultes of the minde, a suer and moderate dominion & rule. This noble vertue is deuided into three⁶ partes, that is Cōtinency, Clemencie, and Modesty, which well⁷ obserued and kept (if grace bee to them adioyned) it is impossible for him that is endued with the aboue named vertues euer to fall into the infortunate snares of calamity, or misfortune. But Ambition which is immoderate⁸ desire of honour, rule, dominion, and superioritie, (the very distruction of nobility and common weales, as among the Romanes; Sylla, Marius, Carbo, Cinna, Cateline, Pompey, and Cæsar, are witnesses) hath brought great decay to⁹ our cōtreys, and countrey men. Which Master Baldwin hath so touched¹ in his Epistle of the laste² volume of this booke, that I nede not therewith deale any further.³ I haue here (right honorable) in this booke⁴ only reproued foly in those which are heedelesse: Iniurie in extortioners, rashnes in venterers,

⁵ He is not counted bolde, manly and constant but made beastly and desperate. I will also sith I haue gone so farre with the vertues (and the place so vrgeth) lastly set downe the difinition of Temperaunce, according to *Cicero* his opinion. Temperaunce (saith he) is of reason, &c. ib.

⁶ Vertue hath three. ib. ⁷ Well and wisely.

⁸ An immoderate. ib. ⁹ Also to. ib. ¹ Learnedly touched. ib.

² Other. ib.

³ Further. [Onely I would to God it were so ofte read and regarded of all Magistrates as the matter requireth.] ib.

⁴ Booke (which I am so bold to dedicate to your honors.) ib.

[trecherie in traytours, riote in rebelles,]⁵ and excesse in such as suppress not vnruly affections. Now⁶ I truste you will so thinke of it (althoughe the style deserue not like commendation) as you thought of the other parte. Which if you shall, I doubt not but it may pleasure some; if not, yet geue occasiō to others which cā do better, either to amend these, or to publish their owne.⁷ And thus wishing you Prudence to discerne what is meete for your callings, Iustice in the administration of your functions, Fortitude in the defence of your Countrey, and Temperaunce in moderation of all your affections, with increase of honours, and euerlasting felicity: I bid you in Christ Iesu farewell.⁸ At Winceham the vii. day of December.

1586.

Your most humble in
the Lord,

JOHN HIGGINS.⁹⁵ Not in first edit.⁶ And. ib.⁷ Can do farre better, either with eloquence to amend that is amisse in mine, or else when they see these so rudely pende, to publish their own. ib.⁸ Your humble Iohn Higgins. [ed. 1575.]⁹ From edition, 1587.

“ I. HIGGINS TO

THE READER.

“ Amongst diuers and sondry chronicles of many nations, I thinke there are none (gentle reader) so vncertaine and brief in the beginning as ours: at which I cannot but maruayle, sith at all tymes our Ilande had as learned wryters (some singular men excepted) as any nation vnder the sunne. Againe, those which now are our best chroniclers as they report, haue great antiquities; but what they publish of late yeares may be enlarged in many places by chronicles of other nacions: whereby it is manifest they are either ignoraunt of the tōgues, or els not giuen to the studie of that, which they most professe. For if they were, me-thinkes it were easie for them, with such antiquities as they brag they haue, to fetch our histories from the beginning; and make them as ample, as the chronicles of any other country or nation. But they are faine, in steede of other stuffe, to talk of the Romaines, Greekes, Persians, &c. and to fill our histories with their facts and fables. This I speake not to the end I wold haue ours quite seperate from other, without any mention of them; but I would haue them there only named, where th’ affayres of both countries, by warre, peace, truce, mariage, trafique, or some necessary cause or other, is intermixed. I haue seen no auncient antiquities in written hand but two: one was Galfridus of Munmouth, which I lost by misfortune; the other, an old chronicle in a kind of Englishe verse, beginning at Brute and ending at the death of Humfrey Duke of Gloucester; in the which, and diuers other good chronicles, I finde many thinges not mentioned in that great tome engroced

of late by Maister Grafton; and that, where he is most barraine and wantes matter. But as the greatest heades, the grayest hayres, and best clarkes, haue not most wytte; so the greatest bookes, titles, and tomes, contayne not most matter. And this haue I spoken, because in wryting the Tragedies of the first infortunate princes of this Isle, I was often fayne to vse mine owne simple inuention, yet not swaruing from the matter: because the chronicles (although they went out vnder diuers men's names) in some suche places as I moste needed theyr ayde, wrate one thing, and that so brieflye, that a whole prince's raigne, life, and death, was comprysed in three lines; yea, and sometimes mine olde booke, aboue mentioned, holpe mee out when the rest forsoke mee. As for Lanquet, Stowe, and Grafton, [they] were alwayes nighe of one opinion: but the Floure of Histories somewhat larger: some helpe had I of an old chronicle imprinted the yeare 1515. But surely methinkes, and so do most which delite in histories, it were worthely done, if one chronicle wer drawne from the beginning in such perfect sort, that al monuments of vertuous men (to the exalting of God's glory) and all punishments of vicious persons (to the terrour of the wicked) might be registred in perpetuall remembraunce. To which thing the right reuerende father in God Matthew [Parker] Archbishop of Canterbury, and Metropolitane of Englande, hath brought such ayde, as wel by printing as preseruing the written chronicles of this realme; that by his grace's studie and paynes, the labour, in tyme to come, wil be farre more easy to them, that shall take such trauayle in hand. But to leaue with these, and declare the cause of my purpose. As I chaunced to reade the *Mirour for Magistrates*, a worke by all men wonderfully commended, and full of fitte instructions for preservation of eche estate: taking in hand the chronicles and minding to conferre the times, meethoughte the liues of a number euen at the beginning, the like infortunate princes offered themselues vnto mee as matter very meete for imitation, the like admoni-

tion, miter, and phrase; and seing Baldwine by these woordes moued mee somewhat thereto; It were (saith hee) a goodly and a notable matter to searche and discourse our whole storye from the beginning of the inhabiting of this Isle, &c. I read the storyes, I considered of the princes, I noted their liues, and therewith conferred their deathes. On this, I tooke penne in hande, minding nothing lesse than to publishe them abroad, but onely to trye what I could do if neede were, or time and leasure were giuen mee to bestowe in such wyse. I wrote the twoo first, euen as they now are, and because I would not kepe secrete my first labours in this kinde of study (though I might well haue blushed at the basenes of my style) I shewed them to a friend of myne, desiring his vnfayned iudgement in this matter; which when he had read, he neuer left intreating me to wryte other, til I had ended all to the byrth of Christ: and yet not so content; he desired mee t' accomplish the residue til I came to the Conquest, (which were wel nighe fiftie Tragedies): but, wearied with those which I had written, I desired him pause on this, till tyme and leasure were giuen mee. Yet hee, making relation to other his frendes what I had done, left mee not quiet till they likewyse had seene them: whose perswasion, as it seemed without any suspition of assentation or flattery, so hath it made mee bolder at this present then before. "Although (sayd they) your Tragædies be simple, and not comparable to those which the other before haue written; yet when men consider that *many* wrote those, but *one* these; that they are graue writers, you are but yong; the perfection of those stories, and the imperfection of these: finally, the good wil you beare to your country, the commendation of vertue, the detestation of vice, the fal of ambition, the horrible end of traytours, harlots, tyrauntes, adulterers, enchauntes, murderers, and such like; When men (said they) consider these things, they cannot, (how simple soeuer your verse bee,) but thinke well of the matter." At length, with these perswasions

and suche like, I was contente (good reader) to publishe them
for thy behoufe, and the publique weale of my cuntrye; at
which if thou enuie, I minde not therefore to enuie my selfe,
and staye my penne. But (God willing) thou shalt, as fast
as I can prepare them, haue other bookes from my handes,
which maye please thee againe; and thus with all my harte
I bidde thee hartely farewell. Thy friende I. H."

¹ From first edition. This address is omitted in editions 1587 and 1610.

A PREFACE TO THE READER.

[Before the edition 1587.]

ABOUTE a twelue yeares since (gentle reader) when I tooke vpon mee for exercise sake, only to make prooffe in English verse what I could do, & had read the Mirour for Magistrates which Maister Baldwine set forth, (a booke both well penned and also well commended) I perused the Chronicles, I noted the times, I conferred the Princes, and me thought that a nomber euen at the firste inhabiting of this Islande, offered thē selues the like haplesse impes of Fortune, with matter very meete for imitation, and like admonition, meeter and phrase. And sith Maister Baldwine in these words of his preface moued mee somewhat thereto: It were (sayth hee) a goodly and a notable mater to search, and discours our whole storie from the beginning of the inhabiting of this Isle, &c. I read agayne the stories, I considered of the Princes, I noted their liues, and therewith conferred their falles: on this I tooke penne in hande, and wrote a fewe of the firste euen as they since were imprinted, minding nothing lesse then to publish them abroad: and because I woulde not keepe secret my first laboures in this kinde of studie, (although I mighte haue blushed at the basenes of my style) I shewed them to some frendes of myne, desired their vnfayned iudgementes herein, who not only perswaded mee that they were well, but also desired mee to followe the same order till I came to the birth of Christe: which when I had done, yet they willed mee to proceede with the falles of the like vntill the conqueste, which I coulde not doe, being called away by other studies of more importaunce, but the rest which I wrot after that time and

at leisure since by the perswasions of some worshipfull, and my very good frendes; I haue here set downe, and agayne corrected those which I wrot before, euen for the profit of my native countrey. Now I desire thee (gentle reader) so well to accept of my paynes and good will herein bestowed, as I was well willing by this edition to doe thee ease, and pleasure. And so whishing thee the feare of God, the loue of thy Prince and countrey, and after this lyfe the fruition of perfecte felicitye, I doe bid thee hartely in Christe Iesu farewell.

Thy frende,

JOHN HIGINS.*

* This is principally taken from the latter part of the prefatory epistle of 1575.

THOMAS NEWTON

TO THE READER,

in the behalfe of this Booke.

AS when an arming sword of prooffe is made,
Both steele and yron must be tempred well :
(For yron giues the strength vnto the blade,
And steele, in edge doth cause it to excell)
As ech good Bladesmith by his Arte can tell :

For, without yron, brittle will it breake,
And, without steele, it will bee blunt and weake :

So bookes, that now theyr faces dare to show,
Must mettald bee with Nature and with Skill :
For Nature causeth stuffe enough to flow,
And Arte the same contriues by learned quill
In order good, and currant methode still.

So that, if Nature frowne, the case is hard :
And if Arte want, the matter all is marde.

The worke, which here is offred to thy vewe,
With both these poynts is full and fitly fraught ;
Set foorth by sundry of the learned Crewe :
Whose stately styles haue Phœbus garland caught,
And Parnasse mount theyr worthy works haue raught,
Theyr wordes are thundred with such maiestie,
As fitteth right ech matter in degree.

Reade it therefore, but reade attentiuely,
Consider well the drift whereto it tendes :
Confer the times, perpend the history,
The parties states and eke theyr dolefull endes,
With odde euentes, that diuine iustice sendes.

For, thinges forepast are presidents to vs,
Whereby wee may thinges present now discusse.

Certes this worlde a Stage may well bee calde,
 Whereon is playde the parte of en'ry wight :
 Some, now aloft, anon with malice galde
 Are from high state brought into dismall plight.
 Like counters are they, which stand now in sight
 For thousand or ten thousand, and anone
 Remooued, stande perhaps for lesse then one.

1587.

THOMAS NEWTONUS,

*Cestreshyrius.*¹

¹ First printed and now given from edition 1587 : also in Niccols.

THE AUTHORS INDUCTION.

1.

When Sommer sweete, with all her pleasures past,
 And leaues began, to leaue the shady tree,
 The winter colde encreased on full fast,
 And time of yeare to sadnes moued mee :
 For moysty blastes, not halfe so mirthfull bee,
 As sweete *Aurora* bringes in spring time fayre,
 Our ioyes they dimme, as winter damps the ayre.

2.

The nights began, to growe to lengthe apace,
 Sir *Phœbus* to th' Antartique gan to fare :
 From Libraes lance, to th' Crab hee tooke his race
 Beneth the lyne, to lende of light a share.
 For then with vs the dayes more darkishe are,
 More shorte, colde, moyste, and stormy cloudy clit,
 For sadnes more then mirths or pleasures fit.

3.

Deuising then, what bookes were best to reade,
 Both for that time, and sentence graue also,
 For conference of frende to stande in steade,
 When I my faithfull frende was parted fro ;
 I gate mee strayght the Printers shops vnto,
 To seeke some worke of price I suerly ment,
 That might alone my carefull mynde content.²

² Higin, by correcting what he had wrote before, re-composed several passages :
 The first three stanzas of the Induction are thus varied in the edition of 1575:

As Somer sweete with all hir pleasures past,
 And leaues began to leaue both braunche and tree,
 While winter cold approched neere full faste,
 Mee thought the time to sadnes moued mee
 On drouping daies not half such mirth haue wee,
 As when the time of yeare and wether's fayre,
 So moue our mindes as mocions moue the ayre.

4.

Amongst the rest,³ I found a booke so sad,
 As tyme of yeare or sadnesse⁴ coulde requier :
 The Mirour namde, for Magistrates hee had,
 So finely pende, as harte could well desire.
 Which when I read, so set my heart on fire,
 Eftsoones it mee constraynde to take the payne,
 Not lefte with once,⁵ to reade it once agayne.

5.

And as agayne I vewde this worke with heede,
 And marked playne each party paynt⁶ his fall :
 Mee thought in mynde, I sawe those men indeede,
 Eke howe they came in order Princely⁷ all ;
 Declaring well, this life is but a thrall,
 Sith those on whom, for Fortunes giftes wee stare,
 Ofte sooneste sinke, in greatest seas of care.

6.

For some, perdy, were Kinges of highe estate,
 And som were Dukes, and came of regall race :
 Som Princes, Lordes, and Iudges greate that sate
 In councell still, decreeing euery case.
 Som other Knightes, that vices did imbrace,

The wearye nightes approched on apace
 With darksom shades which somewhat breedeth care,
 The Sun hath take more neere the earth his race,
 In Libra than his greatest swinge he bare,
 For pardy then the daies more colder are,
 Then fades the greene fruite timely, herbes are don,
 And wynter ginnes to waste that Sommer won,

I deemde some booke of mourning theame was beste
 To reade, wherwith instructions mingled so
 As migh[t] againe refresh my wittes oppreste,
 With tediousnes not driue mee quyte therfro :
 Wherfore I went the printer's straight vnto,
 To seeke some woорke of price I surely mente
 That might herein my carefull mynde contente.

³ At leength by hap, ib.⁴ Wynter, ed. 1575.⁵ Not leaue with once, ib.⁶ Tell, ib.⁷ Pleading, ib.

Som Gentlemen, som poore exalted hye :
Yet euery one, had playde his tragedye.

7.

A Mirour well it might⁸ bee calde, a glasse
As cleare as any⁹ cristall vnder Sun :
In each respecte, the Tragedies so passe,
Theyr names shall liue, that such a worke begun.
For why, with such *Decorum* is it don,
That *Momus* spight with¹ more then *Argus* eyes,
Can neuer watche, to keepe it from the wise.

8.

Examples there, for all estates you finde,
For iudge (I say) what iustice hee shoulde vse :
The noble man, to beare a noble mynde,
And not him selfe ambitiously abuse.
The gentleman vngentlenes refuse,
The rich and poore, and eu'ry one may see,
Which way to loue, and liue in due² degree.

9.³

I wishe them often well to reade it than,
And marke the causes why those Princes fell :
But let mee ende my tale that I began.

⁸ May. ib.

⁹ More cleare then any. ib.

¹ Which. ib.

² His. ib.

³ Thus in first edition.

Me thinkes they might beware by others harme,
And eke eschue to clammer vp so hye :
Yet cursed pryde doth all their wittes becharme,
They thinke of naught but prouerbes true do trie :
Who hewes aloft the chips may hurte his eye :
Who climes the tops of trees, wher bowes ar smal,
Or hawty towres, may quickly catch a fall.
This thing full well doth Phaëtons fall declare,
And Icarus aloft would flie and soare :
Eke Bladud once of Britayne rule that bare,
Would clyme and flie, but eache did fal therfore :
For Phaëton was with lightning all to tore,
And Icarus the meane that did not recke,
Was drownde; by fal did Bladud breake his neck,

C

When I had red these Tragedies full well,
 And past the winter euenings⁴ long to tell,
 One night at last I thought to leaue this⁵ vse,
 To take som ease beefore I chaundge my muse.

10.

Wherefore away from reading I mee gate,
 My heauy heade waxte dull for wante of reste:
 I layde mee downe, the night was waxed late,
 For lacke of sleepe myne eyes were sore oppreste:
 Yet fancy still of all theire deathes increaste,
 Mee thought my mynde from them I coulde not take,
 So worthy wightes, as caused mee to wake.⁶

11.

At length appeared clad in purple blacke⁷
 Sweete *Somnus*, rest which comforts eache aliue;
 By ease of mynde, that weares away all wracke,
 That noysome night, from wery witts doth driue,
 Of labours long, the pleasures wee atcheiue.
 Whereat I ioyde, sith after labours paste,⁸
 I might enioye sweete *Somnus* sleepe at laste.⁹

12.

But hee by whom I thought my selfe at reste,
 Reuiued all my fancies fond before:
 I more desirous humbly did requeste,
 Him shew th' vnhappy *Albion* Princes yore.¹
 For well I wist, that hee coulde tell mee more,

The scriptures eake of such beare witnes can;
 As Babilon for high presumption fell:
 But let me ende my tale—

⁴ And past the night with labours long. ib.

⁵ My. ib.

⁶ Methoughte nothing my minde from them could take,
 So long as *Somnus* suffered me to wake. ib.

⁷ Then straight appeard in purple colour blacke. ib. At last appeared. N.

⁸ After paynes were past. ed. 1575.

⁹ I might receiue by *Somnus* ease at last. ib.

¹ Vnhappy princes were of yore. ib.

Sith vnto diuers, *Somnus* erste had tolde,
What thinges were done, in elder times of olde.

13.²

Then strayght hee foorth his seruante *Morpheus* calde,
On *Higgins* here thou muste (quoth hee) attende;
The *Britayne* Peeres to bring (whom Fortune thralde)
From Lethian lake, and th' auncient shapes them lende;
That they may shew why, howe, they tooke their ende,
I will (quoth *Morpheus*) shewe him what they were;
And so mee thought, I sawe them strayght appeare.

14.

One after one, they came in straunge attire,
But some with woundes and bloude were so disguisde,

² Instead of Stanzas 13 and 14 the following are inserted in the first edit.

At length hee foorth his seruant *Morpheus* calde,
And bad him shewe mee from the first to th' ende,
Such persones as in *Britayne* Fortune thralde:
Which straight vpon his calling did attende,
And thus hee spake with countenance of frende,
"Come on thy wayes and thou shalt see and here,
"The *Britaynes* and their doinges what they were."

And as he led me through the darkes a whyle,
At length wee came into a goodly hall,
At th' ende wherof there seemde a duskish Ile:
Out of the which hee gan the *Britaynes* call,
Such only as from Fortune's hap did fall:
Which when he called thryce, me seemde to heare,
The doores to cracke from whence they should appeare.

And thryce I shrinkte aside and shund the sight:
And three times thryce I wishte myselfe away:
Eke thryce from thence there flew a flashe of light,
Three times I sawe them coming make their staye:
At laste they all approchte in such array,
With sundrie shewes, appearing vnto mee,
A straunger sighte then erste with eyes I see.

Men mighty bigge, in plaine and straunge attyre,
But some with wounds and bloud were so disguisde,
You scarcely could with reasons ayde aspire,
To know what warre such cruell death deuisde:
But sithe I haue their formes beneath comprisde,
Wheras their stories seuerally I showe,
Your selfe therby their cause of death may know.

You scarcely coulde by reasons ayde aspire,
 To know what warre such sondry deaths deuisde ;
 And seuerally those Princes were surprisde.
 Of former state, these states gaue ample show
 Which did relate their liues and ouerthrow.

15.

Of som the faces bolde and bodyes were ³
 Distaynde with woade, and turkishe beardes they had :
 On th' ouer lyppes mutchatoes long of heyre,
 And wylde they seemde, as men dispayring mad.
 Their looks might make a constant heart ⁴ full sad,
 And yet I could not so forsake the vewe ⁵
 Nor ⁶ presence, ere their myndes I likewise knewe.

16.

For *Morpheus* bade them each in order tell ⁷
 Their names and liues, their haps and haplesse dayes,
 And by what meanes, from Fortunes wheele ⁸ they fell,
 Which did them earst, vnto such honours rayse.
 Wherewith the first not making moe delayes,
 A noble Prince broade wounded brest ⁹ that bare
 Drew neere, to tell the cause of all his care.

17.

Which when mee thought to speake hee might be bolde, ¹
 Deepe from his breste hee threwe an vncouth ² sounde :
 I was amazde his gestures to beholde.
 And bloud that freshly trickled from his wounde,
 With Eccho so did halfe his wordes confounde,
 That scarce a while the sence might playne appeare :
 At last, ³ mee thought, hee spake as you shall heare. ⁴

³ And eke their faces all and bodies were. ib.

⁴ Make my fearful harte. ib.

⁵ For my life eschewe. ib.

⁶ Their. ib.

⁷ For Morpheus wilde me hyde and bad them tell. ib.

⁸ Globe. ib.

⁹ A person tall wide woundes in breste. ib.

¹ And as to speake he wiste he might be bolde. ib.

² Vnquoth, N.

³ But thus. ed. 1575.

⁴ Some copies of Niccols have a castration of this Induction with some trifling difference of orthography.

HOW KING ALBANACT THE YONGEST SON OF BRUTUS,¹ AND FIRST KING OF Albany (now called Scotland) was

*slayne by king Humber, the
yeere before Christ,
1085.*

1.

SITH flattering Fortune sliely could beguile
Mee, first of Brytane Princes in this land :²
And yet at first on mee did sweetely smile,
Doe marke mee here,³ that first in presence stand.
And when thou well my wounded corps hast scand,
Then shalt thou heare my hap to penne the same⁴
In stories calde *Albanactæ* by name.⁵

2.

Lay feare⁶ aside, let nothing thee amaze,
Ne haue despaire, ne scuse the want of time :⁷

¹ The story of Brutus, or Brute, as here related by his son Albanact, closely versifies the principal incidents of his history given in the Chronicle of Saint Albans; an authority probably referred to by Higgins in the prefatory address as "an olde chronicle imprinted the year 1515," that being the date of one of the editions printed by W. de Worde.

² Me first of all the princes of this lande. ed. 1575,

³ Behold mee here. N.

⁴ Then shalt thou see, what tale I mynde to frame. ed. 1575.

⁵ The following stanza is second in edition 1575.

So if thou liste to heare what I recite,
If thou intende to shoue my fatall fall:
I praye thee take the paynes my tale to wryte,
As I in order here repeate it shall,
What nedst thou muse? thou nedst not feare at all.
Syth those that later liu'de their tales haue tolde,
Our elder liues to write thou mayst be bolde.

⁶ Dreade. ed. 1575. ⁷ Ne haue dispaire of so vncouched ryme. ib.

Leaue of on mee with fearefull lookes to gaze,
 Thy pen may serue for such a tale as myne.
 First I will tell thee all¹ my fathers lyne,
 Then hitherward why hee with Troians man'd,
 His voyadge made, and founde this noble land.²

3.

And last I minde to tell thee of my selfe,
 My life and death, a Tragedy so true
 As may approue your world is all but pelfe,
 And pleasures sweete, whom sorows aye ensue.
 Hereafter eke in order comes a crue,
 Which can declare, of worldly pleasures vayne
 The price wee all haue bought, with pinching³ paine.⁴

4.

When Troy was sackt, and brent, and could not stand,
Aeneas fled from thence, *Anchises* sonne,
 And came at length to King *Latinus* land:
 Hee *Turnus* slew, *Lauinia* eke hee wonne.
 After whose death, *Ascanius* next his sonne
 Was crowned King, and *Siluius*, then his heire,
 Espoused to a Latine Lady faire.⁵

¹ Of. N.² Then why he flying from the Latin land
Did saile the seas and found the Briton strand. N.³ Greeuous. ed. 1575.⁴ The following omitted stanza from ed. 1575.

Well nowe I see thou putst apart thy fright,
 (And giuste an eare to heare not heard before)
 I will declare the storie all so right,
 Thou shalt no whit haue neede t'inquire no more;
 Do marke me well what I recite therefore,
 And after write it and therewith my name,
 Let hardly me receiue if ought be blame.

⁵ And reign'de iii yeares, *Ascanius* then his sonne,
Reignde next to him, eke *Siluius* was his heyre,
Begate my father, of a Lady fayre. ib.

5.

By her had *Siluius* shortly issue eke,
 A goodly Prynce, and *Brutus* was his name.
 But what should I of his misfortune speake,
 For hunting, as hee minded strike the game,
 He shot⁶ his father, that beyond it came.

The quarrell⁷ glaunst, and through his tender side
 It flewe where through the noble *Siluius* dyde.⁸

6.

Lo thus by chaunce though princely *Brutus* slewe
 His father *Siluius*, sore agaynst his will,
 Which came to soone, as he his arrowe drewe
 Though hee in chace the game, did minde to kill,
 Yet was hee banisht from his countrey still,⁹
 Commaunded neuer¹ to retourne no more,
 Except he would his life to loose therefore.

7.

On this, to Greece Lord *Brutus* tooke his way,
 Where Troians were, by Græcians, captiues kept:
Helenus was by *Pirrhus* brought away
 From death of Troians, whom their² friends bewept.
 Yet hee in Greece this³ while no busines slept,
 But by his facts, and feates obtayn'd such fame,
 Seauen thousand captiue Troians to him came.

⁶ Strook. N.⁷ "An arrow with a square head." Johnson.

⁸ But when as *Brutus* fiftene yeares was olde,
 (For so they calde my father by his name)
 With *Siluius* then a hunting goe he would,
 And thinking for to strike in chace the game,
 His father that by chaunce beyonde it came,
 Receiude the glaunce and through his tender syde,
 With deadly dint, the shaft did swiftly slyde. ed. 1575.

⁹ So though by chaunce my father *Brutus* slewe,
 My grandsyre *Siluius*, sore against his will:
 Which came by chaunce as he his arrow drewe,
 That thought the fearfull Harte, not him to kill:
 Yet was he banisht from Italia still: &c. ib.

¹ Thither. N.² From death of those whose fall their. ed. 1575.³ My father all this. ib.

8.

Assaracus a noble Græcian eke,
 Who by his mother came of Troian race,
 Because he sawe himselfe in Greece to weake,⁴
 Came vnto him to ayde him in this case,
 For that his brother thought him to deface.⁵

Which was a Greeke by both his parents sides,
 His Castells three the Troian *Brutus* guides.

9.

While⁶ hee to bee theyr Captayne was content,
 And as⁷ the Troians gathered to his band,
 Ambassage to the⁸ Græcian King he sent,
 For to entreate they⁹ might depart his land.
 Which when King *Pandrasus* did vnderstand,
 An army strayght he did therefore addresse,
 On purpose all the Troians to suppress.

10.

So as King¹ *Pandrasus* at Spartane towne
 Thought them in deserts by, to circumuent,
 The Troians with² three thowsand beate them downe,
 Such fauoure loe, them³ Lady Fortune lent.
 By *Mars* his force, their rayes and ranckes hee rent,
 And tooke Antigonus the brother of their King,⁴
 With others moe, as captiues home to bring.

11.

The taken towne from which the King was fled,
 Sir *Brutus* with sixe hundreth men did man,
 Eche prisoner was vnto his keeper led
 To keepe in towne, the noble Troians wan:
 And into woods the Troiane gate him than⁵

⁴ Saw my father's powre not weke. 1575.

⁵ For of his brother he could finde no grace. N.

⁶ Thus. 1575.

⁷ All. ib.

⁸ His post vnto the. ib.

⁹ He. ib.

¹ Then whyle King. ib.

² My father with. ib.

³ Him. ib.

⁴ And tooke the brother of the Grecian King. N.

⁵ My father into woods conueyde him than. ed. 1575.

Againe with his, hee kept him there by night
To quaile the Græcians if they came to fight.

12.

The King which cal'd to minde his former foile,
His flight, and brother deare by Troians take,⁶
The towne hee lost, where *Brutus* gaue⁷ the spoile,
Hee thought not so the fielde and fight forsake,
But of his men a muster new to make,
And so againe for to besiege the towne
In hope reuenge, or winne his lost renowne.

13.

By night the ambushe,⁸ that his purpose knew,
Came forth from woods, whereas they⁹ waited by,
The Troians all th' vnarmed Græcians slew,
Went through their campe, none could their force deny,
Vnto the tent where *Pandrasus* did ly,
Whereas Lord *Brutus*¹ tooke their King that night,
And sau'd his life as seem'd a worthy wight.

14.

This great exploite so wisely well atchiu'd,
The Troiane victour did a counsaile call,
Wherein might bee for their estate contriu'd,
By counsaile graue, the publique weale of all.
Now tell (quoth he) what raunsome aske wee shall?
Or what will you for our auaile deuise?
To which *Mempricius* answer'd, graue and wise.²

⁶ And when the king had calde to mynde his foyle,
His flighte, and brother by the Troianes take. ib.

⁷ And *Brutus* had. ib.

⁸ By night my father. ib.

⁹ He. ib.

¹ My father. ib.

² Which victorie when he had wisely won,
The Trojane victour did a counsaile call,
To knowe what best were with the king be don;
Now tell (q' he) what ransom aske we shall:
On which when none agreed scarce of ail,
At length *Mempricius* vp from seate did ryse
And silence made, gaue thus his counsaile wise. ib.

15.

“ I cannot (*Brutus*³) but commend thine act⁴
 In this, thou noble Captaine, worthy praise :
 Which deemest well, it were an heynous fact,⁵
 T’ abridge the Grecian king of vitall daies,
 And that wee ought⁶ by clemency to raise
 Our fame to skie, not by a sauage guise,
 Sith Gods and men both, cruelty despise.

16.

“ The cause wee fought, was for the freedome all
 Of Troians taken, wee haue freedome won,
 Wee haue our purpose, and their king withall,
 To whom of rigour nothing ought bee done :
 Though hee the quarrel with vs first begon,
 And though wee owe the fall of Troyes requite,
 Yet let reuenge thereof from gods to lighte.

17.

“ His subiects now bewaile⁷ their proude pretence,
 And weapons laide aside, for mercy crie :
 They all confesse their plagues to come from thence,
 Where first from faith of Gods they seemd to fly.
 Their Nobles dare not come the case to try,
 But euen for peace, with all their heartes, they sue,
 And meekly graunt, whence all their mischiefes grewe.

18.

“ The Princesse⁸ fayre, his daughter, who surmounte
 For vertues rare, for beautie braue, and grace,
 Both *Helen* fine, of whom they made accountes,
 And all the rest that come of Græcian race,
 Shee for her father sues, bewailes his case,

³ Troianes. ed. 1575.⁴ The fact. ib.⁵ Which thought, as ’twas a wicked heynous acte. ib.⁶ We rather ought. ib.⁷ All do wayle. ib.⁸ Lady. ib.

Implores, desires thy grace, and gods aboue,
Whose woes may them and thee to mercy moue.⁹

19.

“ Some Troians say hee should deposed bee
From kingdome quite, or else bee slaine hee should,
And wee here byde, eke this mislyketh me,
Nay rather while wee stay keepe him in hold,
Or let him pay a raunsome large of gold,
And hostage geue, and homage doe of right
To thee, that wonst the fielde by Martiall fight.¹

20.

“ For kingdomes sake a captiue king to kill,
As euill abroade as in his natie lande,²
For vs in Greece to dwell were euen as ill,
The force of Greece we cannot still withstande.
Let vs therefore both cruelty abande,
And prudent seeke both gods and men to please :
So shall we finde good lucke at lande and seas.³

21.

“ Or sith the Græcians will thee for to take
The noble Ladie *Iunogen* to wyfe,
If thou so please, let him her dowry make

⁹ And by hir wisdom, cheere and parentes loue,
Doth vs, and Brutus, both to pitie moue. ib.

¹ Yet some will saye, he should depriued bee,
Of kingdome quite, and worthy Brutus should
Receiue the scepter, this misliketh mee,
To this vniustice, Brutus, if we could
Consent, I deeme, agree he neuer would,
So much himselfe ambitiously t' abuse,
Or else a king vnkindly so to vse, ib.

² Our names for aye with foule defame would brand. N.

³ For kingdomes sake a king at home to kill
Were farre to had, within his natie lande :
Though he by right or wrong directed still,
His force gainst vs, that did him so withstande :
The king hath therefore ay the sworde in hand,
If any kicke against his pointes of lawe :
To cut them of, or keepe them vnder awe. ed. 1575.

Of golde, ships, siluer, corne, for our reliefe,
 And other thinges, which are in *Græcia* ryfe.
 That we so fraught may seeke some desert shore,
 Where thou and thyne may raygne for euermore.⁴

22.

This pleas'd both *Brutus* and the Troians all,
 Who wil'd forthwith that *Pandrasus* the King,
 Should reuerently be brought into the hall,
 And present when they tolde him of this thing :
 So grieve and sorowe great his heart did stinge,
 He could not shewe by countenaunce or cheere
 That he it lik'd, but spake as you shall heare.

23.

“Sith that the wrath of gods hath yeelded me,⁵
 And eke my brother, captiues to your hands,
 I am content to do as pleaseth yee,
 You haue my realme, my lyfe, my goods and landes,⁶
 I must be needes content as Fortune standes.
 I gieue my daughter, gold, and siluer fine,
 With what for dowry els you craue is myne.”

24.

To make my tale the shorter if I may,
 This truce concluded was immediately :⁷
 And all thinges else performed by a day,
 The King restor'd that did in pryson lie.
 The Troians parted from the shores, perdy,⁸

⁴ 'Tis best, O Brutus, if thou like her, take
 His daughter Innogen vnto thy wyfe:
 And let the king a dowry large hir make:
 Gold, syluer, shippes, and corne for our reliefe:
 With other thinges whereof this lande is rife:
 That wee so fraught may seeke some desert shore
 Where wee and ours may raigne for euermore. ed. 1575.

⁵ The hateful gods haue yelded mee. ib.

⁶ For feare I leese both life and goodes and landes. ib.

⁷ My father then was married by and by. ib.

⁸ The Troians proud of spoiles and victorie. N.

Did hoyse vp sayles, in two dayes and a night
Vpon the Ile of Lestrignons⁹ they light.

25.

And leauing of their ships at roade, to land
They wandring went the countrey for to vew:
Loe there a desert city olde they fand,
And eke a temple (if reporte bee true)
Where in Dianas temple olde, the crew¹⁰
To¹ sacrifice their captaine counsaile gaue
For good successe, a seate and soyle to craue.²

26.

And he no whit misliking their aduice
Went forth, and did before the altar hold
In his right hand a cup to sacrifice,
And fild with³ wine, and white hinds bloud scarce cold.
And then before her stature straight hee told
Deuoutly all his whole petition there,
In sorte (they say) as is repeated heere.⁴

27.

“ O goddesse great in groues that putst wilde boares in feareful feare,
And maist goe all the compasse pathes of euery ayrye sphere,
Eke of th’ infernall houses too, resolute the earthly rights,
And tell what countrey in to dwell thou giu’st vs Troian wights.
Assigne a certaine seate where I shall worship thee for aye,
And where repleat with virgins, I, erect thy temples maye.”

28.

When nine times hee had spoken this, and went
Foure times the altar rounde, and staide agen,
He powr’d the wine and bloud in hand hee hent

⁹ Leogrece. ed. 1575. ¹⁰ Where Dian dwelt of whom the Troian crew. N. ¹ In. ib.

² Wherin Diana to such credit grewe:
That sacrifice the Troianes counsaile gaue,
My father make, an aunswere for to haue. ed. 1575.

³ Efilde with. ib. ⁴ In better sorte then I repeate it here. ib.

Into the fire. O witlesse cares of men,
Such folly meere, and blindnes great was then.
But if religion now biddes toyes farewell,
Embrace that's good, the vice of times I tell.

29.

He layde him then downe by the altars side,
Vpon the white *Hindes* skin espred therefore :
It was the third houre of the night, a tyde
Of sweetest sleepe, hee gaue himselfe the more
To rest⁵ perdy.⁶ Then seemed him before
Diana chaste, the goddesse to appeare,
And spake to him these wordes that you shall heare,

30.

“ O *Brute*, farre vnder *Phœbus* fall, beyonde of *France* that raigne,
An Iland in the Ocean is, with sea tis compast mayne,
An Iland in the Ocean is, where *Giautes* erst⁷ did dwell :
But now a desert place that's fit, will serue thy people well.
To this direct thy race, for there shall bee thy seate for aye,
And to thy sonnes there shall bee built another stately *Troye*.
Here of thy progeny and stocke, shall mightie Kings descend,
And vnto them as subiect, all the world shall bow and bend.”

31.

On this hee woke, with ioyfull cheere, and told
The vision all, and oracle it⁸ gaue :
So it reioyst their hearts a thowsande fold.
To ships they got, away the shores they draue,
And hoysing sailes, for happie windes they craue.
In thirty dayes their voyage so they dight,
That on the coast of *Aphrica*⁹ they light.

32.

Then to *Philænes* altars they attayn'd,
(For so men call two hilles erected are

⁵ Surelie. N.⁶ To reste and sleep. ed. 1575.⁷ Once. ib.⁸ Aunswere that it, ib.⁹ Affrica. ib.

In Tumise land) two brethren ground that gain'd
 For Carthage once, and went tis sayd too farre,
 On Cyren ground for bounds, there buried were.
 Because they would not turne againe, but striue
 With Cyren men, they buried them aliue.

33.

From thence they sailed through the middle lake,
 Betwene Europa fayre and Aphrica the drye :
 With winde at will, the doubtfull race they take,
 And sail'd to Tuscan shores, on Europe coast that lye.
 Where at the last amongst the men they did descrye
 Fowre banisht bandes of Troians in destresse
 To sayle with them, which did themselues addresse.¹

34.

Companions of *Antenor* in his flight,
 But *Corinæus* was their captayne than,
 For counsayle graue² a wise and worthy wight :
 In warres the prayse of³ valiantnesse he wan.
 Lord *Brutus* liked well this noble man,
 With him full oft confer of fates hee wold,
 And vnto him the oracles hee told.⁴

35.

The Troians so in number now encreast,
 Set on to sea and hoysed sayles to wynde.
 To *Hercules* his pillers from the East

¹ From thence they sayled vnto *Saliues* lake :
 Twene *Azara* hilles, and *Ruscitadam*
 They paste, from thence to *Malua* floud they gate
 To *Hercules* his pillers sight they came :
 And then to Tuscan seas whereas by fame,
 Not far from shore, like minded mates they finde,
 Foure banisht races of the Troian kinde. ib.

² Calde. ib.³ For. ib.

⁴ My father did so frendely vse this man,
 He was content and all his men besyde :
 To trie aduentures by my fathers guyde. ib.

They cast by compasse ready way to finde:
 Where through once past to Northward race they twinde,
 To Pirene cleenes, tweene Spayne and France the bounde,
 Reioycing neere the promist Ile so founde.⁵

36.

Eke⁶ vnto Guyne in France they sayled thence,
 Where⁷ at the hauen of Loire they did arriue,
 To vewe the countrey was their whole pretence
 And victayles get, their souldiers to reuiue.⁸
 Eke *Corinæus* lest the Galles should striue,
 Led forth two hundreth of his warlike band,
 To get prouision to the ships from land.

37.

But when the King *Goffarius* heard of this,
 That Troians were arriued on his shore,
 With Frenchmen and with Guynes their power and his,
 Hee came to take the pray they gat before,
 And when they met, they fought it both full sore,
 Till *Corinæus* rusht into their band,
 And caus'd them fly: they durst no longer stand.

38.

First might you there seene hearts of Frenchmen broke,
 Two hundreth Troians gaue them all the foyle
 At home, with oddes, they durst not byde the stroke,
 Fewe Troians beate them in their natie soyle.
 Eke *Corinæus* followed in this broyle,
 So fast vpon his foes before his men,
 That they return'd and thought to spoyle him then.

39.

There hee alone against them all, and they
 Against him one, with all their force did fight,

⁵ This Stanza not in the first edit.⁶ Then. ib.⁷ And. ib.⁸ And vitayles for their men and them atchiue. ib.

At last by chaunce his sword was flowne away,
 By fortune on a battayle axe hee light,⁹
 Which hee did driue about him with such might,
 That some their hands, and some their armes did leese,
 Some legges, of some the head from shoulders flees.

40

As thus amongst them all hee fought with force,
 And fortune great, in daunger of his lyfe,
 Lord *Brutus*¹ had on him therewith remorce,
 Came with a troupe of men to ende the strife.
 When Frenchmen saw the Troians force so rife,
 They fled away, vnto their losse and payne;
 In fight and flight nigh all their host was slayne.

41.

And in that broyle, saue *Corinæus*, none
 Did fight so fearcely, as did *Turnus* then:
 Sir *Brutus*² cosin with his sword alone
 Did sley that time well nigh sixe hundreth men.
 They founde him dead as they return'd agen,
 Amongst the Frenchmen, wounded voyde of sence,
 And bare his noble corps with honour thence³.

42.

On this they bode awhile reuenge to yeelde,
 And to interre the dead, and *Turnus* slaine,
 They tooke a towne not far from place of fielde,
 And built it strong, to vex the Galles agayne.
 The name they gaue it still doth yet remayne:
 Sith there they buried *Turnus*, yet men call
 It Tours, and name the folke Turones all.

⁹ By fortune on an halberde then he light. ib.

¹ My father. ib.

² My father's. ib.

³ ————voide of breath,
 Which pincheth my fathers hart as pangs of death. ib.

43.

Which towne they left at last with Troians man'd,
 When as their ships were storde with what they neede
 Aboarde, they hoise vp sayles and left the land,
 By ayding windes they cut the seas with speede.
 At length the shyning Albion clyues⁴ did feede
 Their gazing eyes, by meanes whereof they fand
 Our Totnes hauen, and tooke this promist land.

44.

The countrey seemed pleasaunt at the vewe,
 And was by fewe⁵ inhabited, as yet,
 Saue⁶ certaine Giautes whom they did pursue,
 Which straight to Canes in Mountaines did them get:
 So fine were Woods, and Flouds, and Fountaines set,
 So cleare the ayre, so temperate the clime,
 They neuer saw the like before that time⁷.

45.

And then this Ile that Albion had to name,
 Lord *Brutus* caus'd it Britaine cal'd to bee,⁸
 And eke the people Britans of the same,
 As yet in auncient Recordes is to see.
 To *Corinaeus* gaue hee franke and free
 The land of Cornwall, for his seruice don,
 And for because from Giautes hee it won.

46.

Then sith our Troiane flock came first from Troy,
 The Chiefetaine⁹ thought that duty did him binde,
 As¹ Fortune thus had sau'd him from anoy,
 The auncient towne againe to call to minde.

⁴ Cleues. N. ⁵ None. ed. 1575.

⁶ But. ib.

⁷ My father had no cause but like it well

And gaue his souldiers places in to dwell. ib.

⁸ My father caused Britayne called bee. ib.

⁹ My father. ib.

¹ Sith. ib.

Hee builde new Troy, them Troian lawes assignde,
 That so his race,² to his eternall fame,
 Might keepe of Troy the euerlasting name³.

47.

And settled there, in perfect peace and rest,
 Deuoid of warre, of laboure, strife, or paine,
 Then *Iunogen* the Queene his⁴ ioyes increast,
 A Prince shee bare, and after other twaine,
 Was neuer King of noble Impes⁵ so faine,
 Three sonnes which had so shortly here begat,⁶
Locrinus, Camber, last mee *Albanact*.

48.

Thus hauing wealth, and eke the world at will,
 Nor wanting ought that might his minde content,
 T' increase his powre with wights of warlike skill
 Was all his minde his purpose and intent.

Whereby if foes inuasion after ment,
 The Britans might not feare of forraine lands,
 But keepe by fight possessions in their hands.

49.

Eke⁷ when his people once perceiu'd his minde,
 (As what the Prince doth often most embrace,
 To that the subiects all are straight inclinde,
 And reuerence still in eche respect his grace)
 They gat in warre such knowledge in short space,
 That after they their force to try begon,
 They car'd for nought by wit or wight not won.

² Whereby his stock. *ib.*

³ "Brute the fyrst King of Brytons, bylded & edefyed this cyte of London, the fyrst cyte of Brytayne, in remembraunce of the cyte of Troye, that was destroyed, and called it Troyeneweth and Trinouantum, that is newe Troye." *Trevisa's Polychronicon*. B. 1. C. xlvii

⁴ Then eke my mother all his, &c. ed. 1575.

⁵ Of children erste. *ib.*

⁶ Three sonnes because of Innogen he gate. *ib.*

⁷ Then. *ib.*

50.

They got of giants mountaines whence they came,
 And woods from whence they oft made wise, they would
 Destroy and kill, when voyage out they frame,
 Or shewde themselves in banding ouer bold:
 Then straight the Britans, gladder then of gold,
 Were ready still to fighte at euery call,
 Till time they had extynct the monsters all.⁸

51.

Whereby the King had cause to take delight,
 And might bee bolde the lesse to feare his foes:
 Perdy⁹ ech Prince may recke his enmies spight,
 Thereafter as his force in fight hee knoes.
 A princely heart the liberall gifts disclose.
 He gaue to eche such guerdons for their facts,
 As might them only mooue to noble acts.

52.

No labours great his subiects then refusde,
 No traуayles that might like his regall minde:
 But ech of them such exercise well vs'd,
 Wherein was praise, or glory great to finde.
 And to their liege bare faithfull hearts so kinde,
 That what hee wild they all obeyd his hest,
 Nought else was currant but y^e Kings request.

53.

What Prince aliuie might more reioyce then hee?
 Had faithfull men, so valiaunt, bold, and stout?
 What pleasures more on earth could lightly bee

⁸ Those mightie people borne of Giants brood,
 That did possesse this Ocean-bounded land,
 They did subdue, who oft in battell stood
 Gainst them in field, vntill by force of hand
 They were made subiect vnto *Brutes* command.
 Such boldnes then did in the Briton dwell,
 That they in deedes of valour did excell. N.

⁹ Surely. N.

Then win an Ile, and liue deuoyde of doubt?
 An Ile sayd I? nay nam'd the world throughout
 Another world, sith sea doth it deuide
 From all, that wants not all the world beside.

54.

What subiects eke more happy were then these?
 Had such a King of such a noble heart,
 And such a land enioyde and liu'd at ease,
 Whereof ech man almost might chose his part?
 No feare of foes, vnknowne was treason's art,
 No fayning friends, no fawning *Gnatoes* skill,
 No *Thrasoes* brags, but bearing ech good will.

55.

But as ech sommer once receaues an ende,
 And as no state can stable stande for aye,
 As course of time doth cause thinges bowe and bend,
 As euery pleasure hath hir ending daye,
 As will can neuer passe the power of maye:
 Euen so my father, happy dayes that spent,
 Perceau'd he must by sicknesse last relent.

56.

As doth the shipman well foresee the storme,
 And knowes what daunger lyes in Syrtes of sand:
 Eke as the husbandman prouides beforne,
 When hee perceaues the winter cold at hand:
 Euen so the wise, that course of things haue scan'd,
 Can well the end of sicknes great presage,
 When it is ioyn'd with yeares of stooping age

57.

His sonnes and Counsaile all assembled were:
 For why hee sent for vs and them with speede.
 Wee came in hast, this newes vs caused feare.

Did cause vs feare. No.

Sith so hee sent, wee thought him sicke indeede.²
 And when wee all approacht to him with heede,³
 Too soone alas, his grace right sicke we found,
 And him saluted as our duties bound.

58.

And casting of his woefull⁴ eyes aside,
 Not able well to moue his painefull head,
 As silent wee with teares his minde abide,
 Hee wil'd himselfe bee reared in his bed.
 Which done, with sight of vs his eyes hee fed,
 Eke pawsing so a while for breath hee stayd,
 At length to them and vs thus wise hee sayd.

59.

“ No maruaile sure, though you herewith bee sad,
 (You noble Britaines) for your *Brutus*' sake.
 Sith whilom mee your captaine stout you had,
 That now my leaue and last farwell must take,
 Thus nature willes mee once an ende to make,
 And leaue you here behinde, which after mee
 Shall die, as mee⁵ departe before you see.

60.

“ You wot wherefore I with the Græcians fought,
 With dinte of sworde I made their force to fly:
Antenor's friends on Tuscan shores I sought,
 And did them⁶ not my promist land deny,
 By Martiall powre I made the Frenchmen fly,
 Where you to saue I lost my faithfull frende,
 For you, at Tours, my *Turnus* tooke his ende.

61.

“ I neede not now recite what loue I bare,
 My friendship you, I trust, haue found so well,

² His counsaile all and wee assembled were,
 To bid vs hie, or haste there was no nede,
 Wee went with them, this newes vs caused feare
 Sith so he sent, he was not well in dede, &c. ed. 1575.

³ Speed. ib.⁴ Doufull. ib.⁵ I. ib.⁶ You. ib.

That none amongst you all which present are,
With teares doth not record the tale I tell.
Eke whom I found for vertues to excell,
To them I gaue the price thereof, as due
As they deseru'd, whose facts I found so true.

62.

“ Now must I proue, if paines were wel bestow'd,
Or if I spent my gratefull gifts in vayne,
Or if these great good turns to you I ow'd,
And might not aske your loyall loues againe :
Which if I wist, what tongue could tell my paine ?
I meane, if you vngratefull mindes doe beare,
What meaneth death to let mee linger here ?

63.

“ For if you shall abuse your Prince in this,
The gods on you for such an haynous fact
To take reuenge bee sure will neuer misse.
And then to late you shall⁷ repent the act,
When all my Realme, and all your wealthes are sackt :
But if you shall, as you begon, proeede,
Of kingdomes fall or foes there is no dreede.

64.

“ And to auoyde contention that may fall,
Because I wisbe this Realme the Britans still,
Therefore I will declare before you all,
Sith you are come, my whole intent and will :
Which if you keepe, and wrest it not to ill,
There is no doubt but euermore with fame
You shall enioy the Britans Realme and name.

65.

“ You see my sonnes, that after mee must raigne,
Whom you or this haue lik'd and counsail'd well.
You know what erst you wisht they should refraine,

⁷ Will. ib.

Which way they might all vices vile expell,
 Which way they might in vertues great excell.
 Thus if you shall, when I am gone, insue,
 You shall discharge the trust repos'd in you.

66.

“ Bee you their fathers, with your counsaile wise,
 And you my children take them euen as mee
 Bee you their guides in what you can devise,
 And let their good instructions teach you three:
 Bee faithfull all: as brethren ought agree:
 For concord keeps a Realme in stable stay:
 But discord brings all kingdomes to decay.

67.

“ Recorde you this: to th' eldest⁸ sonne I giue
 This Middle parte of Realme to holde his owne,
 And to his heyres that after him shall line:
 Also to Camber, that his part bee knowne,
 I giue that land that lyes welnigh oregrowne
 With woodes, Northwest, and mountaines mighty hye,
 By South whereof the Cornish sea doth lye.⁹

68.

“ And vnto thee my yongest sonne, that art
 Mine *Albanact*, I giue to thee likewise
 As much to bee for thee and thine apart,
 As North beyonde the arme of sea there lyes,
 Of which loe heere a Mappe before your eyes.
 Loe heere my sonnes my kingdome all you haue,
 For which (remember) nought but this I craue:¹⁰

69.

“ First, that you take these fathers graue for mee,
 Imbrace their counsaile euen as it were mine:
 Next, that betweene your selues you will agree,

⁸ Record to this mine eldest, &c. ib.

⁹ Twene this and that the *Stutia* streame doth lie. ib.

¹⁰ For which I nought but this remember craue. ib.

And neuer one at others wealth repine,
 See that yee bide still bounde with friendly line :
 And last, my subiects with such loue retaine,
 As long they may your subiects eke remayne.

70.

“ Now faint, ¹ I feele my breath begins to fayle,
 My time is come, giue eche to mee your hand :
 Farewell, farewell, to mourne will not preuayle,
 I see with Knife where *Atropos* doth stand :
 Farewell my friendes, my children and my land,
 And farewell all my subiectes, farewell breath,
 Farewell ten thowsand times, and welcome death.”

71.

And euen with that hee turnde himselfe asyde,
 Vpyeelding, gasping gaue ² away the ghost :
 Then all with mourning voyce his seruantes cry'd,
 And all his subiectes eke, from least to most,
 Lamenting fil'd with wayling plaintes ⁴ ech coast,
 Perdy ⁵ the Britans, all as nature bent, ⁶
 Did for their King full dolefully lament.

72.

But what auayles, to striue against the tide,
 Or else to driue ⁷ against the streame and winde ?
 What booteth it against the Cliues to ride,
 Or else to worke against the course of kinde ?
 Sith Nature hath the ende of thinges assin'd,
 There is no nay, wee must perforce depart,
 Gainst dinte of death there is no ease by arte. ⁸

¹ Loe now. ib.² And gasped thryse and gaue. ib.³ Then all at once with mourning voyce they cryde. ib.⁴ Teares. ib.⁵ And so. N.⁶ All with one assent. ed. 1575.⁷ Sayle. ib.⁸ This stanza follows in edit. 1575,

As custome wild wee funerals preparte,

And all with mourning cloathes, and chere did come,

73.

Thus raign'd that worthy King, that founde this land,
 My father *Brutus*, of the Troian bloud,
 And thus hee died when hee full well had man'd
 This noble Realme with Britans fearce and good.
 And so a while in stable state it stood,
 Till wee deuided had this Realme in three,
 And I to soone receiu'd my part to mee.

74.

Then straight through all the world gan Fame to fly,
 A monster swifter none is vnder Sunne :
 Encreasing as in waters wee descry
 The circles small, of nothing that begunne,
 Which at the length vnto such breadth doe come,
 That of a drop, which from the skies doth fall,
 The circles spread, and hyde the waters all :

75.

So fame in flight increaseth more and more :
 For at the first she is not scarcely knowne,
 But by and by she fleets⁹ from shore to shore,
 To cloudes from th' earth her stature straight is growne :
 There whatsoeuer by her trompe is blowne,
 The sounde that both by sea and land out flies,
 Reboundes againe, and verberates the skies.

76.

They say the earth, that first the Giauntes bred,
 For anger that the gods did them dispatch,
 Brought forth this sister, of those monsters dead,

To laye this king on beere we had regarde,
 In royall sort, as did his corps become,
 His Herce prepar'd, we brought him to his tombe,
 At *Troynoudnt* he built, where he did dye,
 Was he entombde, his royall corps doth lye.

⁹ Flits. ib.

Full lighte of foote, swifte winges the windes to catch;
Such monster erst did nature neuer hatch.

As many Plumes shee hath from top to toe,
So many eyes them vnderwatch, or moe.

77.

And tongues doe speake, so many eares doe harke,
By night tweene heauen she flies and earthly shade,
And shreaking, takes no quiet sleepe by darke:

On houses rowfes, on¹ towres as keeper made
Shee sits by day, and Cities threats t' inuade:

And as she tells what things shee sees by vewe,
Shee rather shewes that's fayned false, then true.

78.

She blazde abroad perdy a people small,²

Late³ landed heere, and founde this pleasaunt Ile,

And how that now it was deuided all,

Made tripartite,⁴ and might within a while

Bee won by force, by treason, fraud, or guile.

Wherefore she moues her frendes to make assay

To win the price, and beare our pompe away.

79.

A thowsand things besides shee bruits and tells,

And makes the most of euery thing shee heares

Long time of vs shee talkes, and nothing els,

Eke what shee seeth abroad in haste shee beares,

With tatling toyes, and tickleth so their eares,

That needes they must to flattering fame assent,

Though afterwards they doe therefore lament.

80.

By East from hence a countrey large doth lye,

Hungaria eke of *Hunnes* it hath to name,

And hath *Danubius'* floud on South it bye,

¹ Or. ib.

² This fame declarde that euen a people small. ib.

³ Had. ib.

⁴ Into three parts. ib.

Deuiding quite from *Austria* the same.
 From thence a king was named *Humber* came :
 On coastes of *Albany* arriued hee,
 In hope this king of *Britan* for to bee.⁵

81.

Which when by postes⁶ of subiects I did heare
 How enemies⁷ were arriued on my shore,
 I gathered all my souldiers voyde of feare,
 And backe the *Hunnes* by force and might I bore.
 But in this battaile was I hurt so sore,
 That in the fielde of woundes I had I dide,
 Where souldiers lost their noble prince and guide.⁸

82.

Such was my fate to venture on so bolde,
 My rashnesse was the cause of all my woe :
 Such is of all our glory vaine the holde,
 So soone wee pompe and pleasures all forgoe,
 So quickly are wee rest our kingdomes free,
 And such is all the cast of Fortune's play,
 When least wee thinke to cut vs quite away.

83.

I deem'd my selfe an heauenly happy wight,
 When once I had my part to raigne within :
 But see the chaunce what hap did after light,
 Or I could scarce t'inioy my glee begin.
 This *Hunne* did seeke from mee my realme to win,
 And had his will : O flattering fortune, fye,
 What meanest thou to make thy selfe so slye :⁹

⁵ ——— did he arriue,

In hope this lande of Britayne to atchiue. ib.

In hope to bee the King of Britanie. N.

⁶ When by report. N.

⁷ Foe-men. N.

⁸ And left my men as flockes without a guide. ed. 1575.

————— of deadly woundes I dide,

My souldiers lost their noble prince and guide. N.

⁹ To worke with princes slye. ed. 1575.

84.

You worthy warriours learne by mee, beware,¹
 Let wisdom worke, lay rashnesse all aparte,
 When as with enmies you encountred are,
 You must endeouore all your skillfull arte,
 By witty wiles with force to make your marte.

Wit nought auayles late bought with care and cost,
 To late it comes when life and all is lost.²

L'ENVOY³.

1.

Musing on these thinges I cal'd to my minde,
 In historyes what I of *Troia* read,
 And what of *Brutus* I in bookes did finde
 Likewise I cast, and counted in my head.
 I found that *Albanact* stode mee in stead.
 For why, *Sicilians* right this noble man
 Calles *Lestrygons*, as they were named than.

2.

Lestrygo was, perdy, *Neptunus'* sonne,
 To whom his father gaue that noble Ile:
 And of his name the people there did wonne.
 The writers false abus'd vs then long while,
 Which set vs downe of *Leogece* an Ile,

¹ By my fall beware. N.² If you repent when life and labours lost.

THE AUTHOUR.

With that the wounded Prince departed quite,
 From sight he slinchte, I sawe his shade no more,
 But Morpheus bade remember this to write,
 And therewithall presented mee before
 A wight wet dropping from the water's shore,
 In princely weede, but like a warlike man,
 And thus mee thought his story he began.

³ The author's continuation, as in first edition, is given in the preceding note. Nicolls uniformly rejected these connecting lines of "the authour" as well as those of the later edition entitled "L'envoy."

So neere *Italia* strandes was placed than,
To which Lord *Brutus* came, that noble man.

3.

Of *Lestrygon* that Ilande first tooke name,
As *Albanact* hath well recited heere.
But of king *Humber* see what nowe became,
Which after him next haplesse did appeare
With Armour wet, as drencht hee lately were:

So downe his greaues the water tricklinges ran,
While he this wise his woefull tale began.

HOW HUMBER THE
king of *Hunnes* minding to conquer *Brit-*
taine, was drowned in the arme of sea now called *Hum-*
ber, about the yeere before Christ.

1085.

1.

THOUGH yet no foraine Princes in this place
Haue come to tell their haplesse great mishap,
Yet give mee leaue a while to pleade my case,
And shewe how I slipt out of Fortunes lap.
Perchaunce some other will eschewe the trap
Wherein I fell, and both themselues beware,
And also seeke the lesse their^r countreyes care.

2.

I am that *Humber* king of *Hunnes*, that came
To win this Ilande from the *Britaynes* fell:
Was drownde in *Humber*, where I left my name:
A iust reward for him that liu'd so well
At home, and yet thought others to expell
Both from theyr realme or right: well seru'd was I,
That by ambition thought to clime so hye.²

3.

But I must blame report, the chiefest cause
Of my decaye: beware of rashe report:
Tis wisdom first to take a while a pause,
Before to dint of daungers you resort:
Least when you come in haste to scale the fort,
By rashe assault some engine shaft or fire
Dispatche you quite, or make you soone retire.

¹ Thy. 1575.

² Both from their realme and right: O filthy fye
On such ambition earst as vsed I. ib.

4.

For vnto mee the rumours dayely flewe,
 That here a noble Ilande might be wonne :
 The king was dead : no warres the people knewe,
 And eke themselues to stryue at home begon.
 It were (quoth I) a noble acte well don
 To win it then : and therewithall did make
 Prouision good, this famous Ile to take.

5.

A warlike regall campe prouided was,
 And shippes, and vittayle, for my *Hunnes* and mee,
 By sea to *Britayne* conquest for to passe,
 If Gods thereto or heauenly starres agree.
 At length wee came to shores of *Albany*,
 And there to fight with *Britaynes* pitch'd our fieldes,
 In hope to make them flinche, flye, fall, or yeelde.

6.

They met vs, long wee scarcely fought it out,
 And doubtfull was the victours part of twaine :
 Till with my *Hunnes* I rusht among the route,
 And fought till that King *Albanact* was slayne.
 Then they to yeelde or pardon craue were fayne,
 And I with triumphes great receau'd the pray,
 And marched forward, flesht with such a fraye.

7.

I past an arme of sea, that would to God
 I neuer had bin halfe so bold at fyrst,
 I made, to beate myselfe withall, a rod,
 When so without³ theyr realme I venture durst,
 But marke my tale, thou heard'st not yet the worst :
 As sure I thought the rest to circumuent
 By spyes before, they knewe my whole intent.

³ Within. ib.

8.

And or I wüst, when I was come to lande,
 Not farre from shore two Princes were prepaide,
 Theyr scouts conueyed away my ships they fande,
 And of my shipmens fleshe they nothing sparde.
 To rescue which, as backe agyane I far'de,
 The armyes twayne were at my heeles behinde,
 So clos'd mee in, I wist no way to winde.

9.

On th' East *Locrinus* with an armie great,
 By West was *Cambre* with an other band :
 By North an arme of sea the shoares did beat,
 Which compast mee and mine within their lande.
 No way to scape was there but Water fande,
 Which I must taste, or else the sworde of those
 Which were to mee and mine full deadly foes.

10.

So when I sawe the best of all mine hoste
 Beate downe with bats, shot, slayne, or forst to swimme,
 Myselfe was fayne likewise to flye the coast,
 And with the rest the waters entred in,
 A simple shift for Princes to begin.
 Yet farre I deem'd it better so to dye
 Then at mine enmies foot an abiect lye.

11.

But when I thus had swam with hope to scape,
 If I might wend the water waues to passe :
 The *Britannes* that before my ships had gate
 Gan watche mee, where amidst the surge I was.
 Than with my boates they rowde to mee (alas)
 And all they cryde keepe *Humber*, keepe theyr King,
 That to our Prince wee may the traytour bring.

E

12.

So with my boats beset, poore *Humber* I
 Wist no refuge, my weery armes did ake,
 My breath was short, I had no powre to crye,
 Or place to stande, whyle I my playnte might make.
 The water colde made all my ioynts to shake,
 My heart did beate with sorowe, grieve, and payne,
 And downe my cheeks salt teares they gusht amayne.

13.

O must thou yeelde, and shall thy boats betraye
 Thy selfe (quoth I) no mercy *Britaynes* haue :
 O would to God I might escape away,
 I wot not yet if pardon I may craue,
 Although my deeds deserue no life to haue.
 I will, I nill, death, bondage, beast am I,
 In waters thus, in forayne soyle to dye.

14.

With that I clapt my quauering hands abroad,
 And helde them vp to heauen, and thus I sayde :
 O Gods that knowe the paynes that I haue bode,
 And iust reuengement of my rashnes payde,
 And of the death of *Albanact* betrayde
 By mee and mine, I yeelde my life therefore,
 Content to dye, and never greeue yee more.

15.

Then straight not opening of my handes, I bowde
 My selfe, and set my head my armes betweene :
 And downe I sprang with all the force I coulde,
 So duckte, that neither head nor foote were seene,
 And neuer sawe my foes agayne I weene :
 There was I drownde : the *Britaynes*, to my fame,
 Yet call that arme of sea by *Humber's* name.³

³ The story of Humber is narrated according to the principal authorities. It is somewhat different in the Chronicle of St. Albans, which says: "so it befel that

16.

Take heede by mee, let my presumption serue,
 And let my folly, fall, and rashnes, bee
 A glasse wherein to see if thou do swerue,
 Thou mayst thy selfe perceiue somewhat by mee,
 Let neither trust, nor treason, trayne forth yee,
 But bee content with thine estate, so shall
 No wrath of God procure thy haplesse fall.

17.

If thou bee foraine, bide with in thy soyle
 That God hath giuen to thee and thine to holde,
 If thou oppression meane, beware the foyle,
 Beare not thy selfe of thee or thine to holde,
 Or of the feates thy elders did of olde.

For God is iust, iniustice will not thriue :

Hee plagues the proude, preserues the good aliue.

this Kynge Humbar was besyde a water that was a great riuer with his folke for to dysporte hym. And there came Lotrin, and Camber with theyr folke sodaynly or that ony of the other hoost knew of them. And whan Humbar dyde se them come in aray he was sore adrad, for as moche as his men wyst it not a fore; and also that they were vnarmed. And a none Humbar for drede lept i to ye water and drowned hymselfe, and so he deyed. And his men were all slayne in so moche that there escaped not one away on lyue. And therefore is that water called Hūbar and euer more shall be, whyle the worlde is world."

4 THE AUTHOURE.

Then vanishte Humber, and no sooner gon
 Was he but straight in place before me came,
 A princely wight had complet harnesse on,
 Though not so complet as they now do frame:
 He seemde sometime t'auē bene of worthy fame,
 In breste a shafte with bleeding wounde he bare,
 And thus he told the cause of all his care. ed. 1575.

LENVOY.

1.

WAS not this drenched king well servde thinke you,
 That could not byde at home content with his?
 Now by his fall and his ambition vewe,
 What good they get which gaze on Fortune's blisse,
 How soone their haps and hoped Ioyes they misse,
 Wherefore the settled minde surmountes the rest,
 The meane contented state of all is best.

2.

The conquest wonne, and kingdome got, you see
 The *Albaynes* all subdude to *Humber's* crowne:
 Yet straight againe the straunger drownde to bee,
 To leese his conquest, kingdomes, and renowme.
 Sith Fortune so sets vp and thirleth downe,
 The settled minde content I counte is blest,
 Reporting true the golden meane is best.

3.

Loe how vaine glory causde him venter life,
 By seas to sayle, by land in field to fight,⁵
 In peace at home abroad to fish for strife,
 And here confesse how *Sors* had sowst him right.
 But king *Locrinus* next apearde in sight.
 A shaft hee bare in wounded bleeding brest,
 And thus (mee thought) his fatall fall exprest.

⁵ A line as vigorous and musical as Dryden.

HOW KING LOCRINVS

the eldest sonne of Brutus liued vitiously,

and was slaine in battaile by his wyfe Queene

Guendoline, the yeere before Christ.

1064.

1.

If euer any noble Prince might rue
His facts are past, long since the same may I,¹
That would to God it were not farre to true,
Or that I iustly could my faultes deny.
The trueth of thinges the end or time doth trie,
As well by mee is seene : my haplesse fall
Declares whence came my great misfortunes all.

2.

I am *Locrinus*, second *Britayne* king,
The eldest sonne of him that found this lande ;
Whose death to mee my mischiefes all did bring,
And causde why first I tooke my death in hand.
Hee chiefly wil'd mee when hee gaue this land,
I should bee rulde by all his counsailes will,
And vse their iudgements in my dealings still.

3.

But what doe I accuse my father's hest,
What meane I here th' unfaulty for to blame :
All hee commaunded euen was for the best,
Though in effect of best the worst became.
So thinges oft times well ment vnfitly frame,
So often times the counsayle of our frend
Apparent good falls faulty in the end.

¹ My haplesse deeds of yore, the same may I. N.

4.

For as hee wisht I vsde his counsailes ayde
 In ech thing that I deemde was good for mee
 I neuer ought that they desir'd denayde,
 But did to all their mindes and hests agree:
 And *Corinæus* sawe my heart so free,
 By diuers meanes hee sought this match to make,
 That to my wife I might his daughter take.

5.

So I, ² that wist not then what mariage ment,
 Did straight agree his *Guendoline* to haue:
 Yet afterward suspecting his intent,
 My frendes to mee this poynte of counsaile gaue,
 That who so doth of Prince aliaunce craue,
 Hee meanes thereby to worke some poynte of ill,
 Or else to frame the Prince vnto his will.

6.

It may well bee hee ment no euill ³ at all,
 But wyse men alwayes vse to dreade the worst.
 And sith it was the fountayne of my fall,
 From whence the spring of all my sorowes burst,
 I may well thinke was some of vs accurst.
 For why, the end doth alwayes proue the facte:
 By end wee iudge the meaning of the acte.

7.

I made no haste to wed my spoused wyfe,
 I wist I could (as yet) without hir bide:
 I had not tasted ioyes of trayned life,
 I deem'd them fooles by Cupid's dart that dide.
 I Venus vile and all hir feates ⁴ defyde,
 I ⁵ liu'd at rest, and rulde my land so well
 That men delighted of my facts to tell.

² But I. ed. 1575.³ Ill. ib.⁴ Force. ib.⁵ And. ib.

8.

My brethren eke long welded well theyr partes,
 Wee fearde no foes, wee thought our state would stand :
 Wee gaue our selues to learned skilfull artes,
 Wherein wee either fruite or pleasure fand,
 And wee enioyde to ⁶ fine a fertile lande,
 That fewe in earth might with our states compare,
 Wee liu'd so voyde of noysome carke and care.

9.

But see the chaunce : when least wee thought of ill,
 When wee esteem'd our state to bee most sure,
 Then came a flawe to bridle all our will,
 For straungers farre gan vs to warre procure :
 And euen when first they put their pranke in vre,
 On *Albayne* shoares my brother there they slewe,
 Whose death wee after made the *Hunnes* to rue.

10.

When hee was deade they hop'd to winne the rest,
 And ouer *Aby* streame with hast did hye.
 But I, and eke my brother *Camber*, drest
 Our armies strayght, and came their force to try.
 Wee brake theyr rayes and forst the king to fly
 Into the arme of sea they ouer came,
 Where *Humber* drownde the waters tooke their⁷ name.

11.

Wee either slewe, or tooke them captiues all,
 Emongst the which (O mischiefe great to tell)
 The Gods to worke mine ouerthrowe and fall
 Sent Ladyes three, whose beauties did excell :
 Of which, because I liked one so well,
 I tooke her strayght, nor shee did ought deny,
 But ech thing graunted so shee might not dye.

12.

Thus *Humber* wee this hatefull hungry king
 In *Humber* drencht, and him depriu'd of pryde,
 And of his lofty⁸ Ladyes he did bring
 He lost the pray, and all his men beside,
 And wee the spoyles of all his hoast deuide.

But I that thought I had the greatest share,
 Had caught the cause of all my woefull care.

13.

They cal'd this Lady *Elstride*, whom I tooke,
 Whose beauty braue did so my wittes confound,
 That for her sake my promise I forsooke,
 Whereby I was to *Guendoline* first bound.

Mee thought no Lady else so high renound⁹

That might allure mee, chaunge my conflate minde,¹⁰

So was I caught by snares of *Cupide* blynde.

14.

Was neuer none before so lik'd myne eye,
 I lou'd her more then I could loue my life:
 Her absence still mee thought did cause mee dye,
 I surely ment to take her for my wife.

But see how beauty breadeth deadly strife,

Lo here began my whole confusion, here

Sprang out the shaft from whence this wound I beare.

15.

For *Corineus* had no sooner heard,
 That I did meane his daughter to forsake,
 But strayght as one that did nought else regard,
 In hast his voyage towards me did take,
 And come, declar'd what promise I did make,¹¹

⁸ Lovely. N.

⁹ No Lady went on earthely ground. ed. 1575.

¹⁰ Euer chaunge my minde. ib.

¹¹ Where he declar'd what promise I did make. N.

From which he sayd if once I sought to slyde,
It would by dynte of sworde, and bloude, be tryde.

16.

But if I would her take, as erst I sayd,
And not this straunger choose agaynst his minde,
His helpe he promiste at each time, and ayde
To be so ready, as I wisht to fynde.
He further sayd my countrey did me binde,
To take such one as all my subiects knewe,
Sith straungers to theyr foes are seldome² true.

17.

I wayde his wordes, and thought he wisht me well,
But yet because his stocke should gayne thereby,
I reckt them lesse: and yet the truth to tell,
I durst not dare my promise made deny.
For well I wist if once it came to try,
It would both weaken all this noble land,
And doubtfull be who should have th'vpper hand.

18.

Thus needes perforce I must his daughter take,
And must leaue of to loue where I delight:
I was constraynd, contented to forsake
The forme that most did captiuat my sight.
What lucke had I on such a lot to lyght?
What ment you Gods that me such fortune gaue,
To cast my minde on her I might not haue?

19.

To short my tale: this *Guendoline* I tooke:
I was content agaynst my will: what then?
Nor quite for this mine *Elstride* I forsooke.
For why, I wrought by skyll of cunning men
A Vault along vnder the ground, a denne

² Never. 1575.

Her company wherein I vsed still,³
There we accomplisht our vnhappy will.

20.

There I begat my *Sabrine* seely childe,
That virgine smale mine *Elstride* bare to mee :
Thus I my wife full often times beguylde,
Which afterward did beare a sonne to me,
Nam'd *Madan* : yet wee neuer could agree.
And he that was the cause she was my bryde,
The while her father *Corinæus* dyde.

21.

Which when I heard, I had my heart's desire,
I crau'de no more, there was my end of grieve :
At lest I thought to quench *Cupidoe's* fire,
And eke to worke my lusting loues reliefe :
I ment no more to steale it like a thiefe,
But married *Elstride*, whom I lou'd as life,
And for her sake I put away my wyfe.

22.

Likewise I caus'd, was *Elstride* Queene proclaymd,⁴
And tooke her as my lawfull wife by right :
But *Guendoline*, that sawe her selfe disdaynd,
Strayght fled, and mou'de the *Cornish* men to fight.
To them when she declarde her piteous plight,
In hast they drest⁵ an army, for to be
Reuengers of my new made Queene and me.

23.

And I likewise an army did prepare,
I thought to quayle theyr courage all by force:

³ " The singuler great loue and affection that he bare vnto the saide *Eastrilde* coued not yet out of his minde and he forgotten, wherfore he made a Caue vnder the ground in the Citie of Troynouant and enclosed her therein—inso much as he had the companie of her the space of vij yeres full, and none knewe it, but a fewe of his verie familyer and faythfull friendes." *Grafton*.

⁴ Likewise my *Elstride* I as Queene ordain'd. N.

⁵ Rais'd. N.

But to my cost I found to late beware :
There is no strength in armoure: men, ne⁶ horse
Can vayne, if *loue* on wronged take remorse.

Sith⁷ he on whom the deadly dart doth light,
Can neuer scape, by ransome, friend, or flight.

24.

So when our armies met nigh *Habrine*⁸ streame,
The trompetts blew and I denyde the peace :
I minded to expell them all the realme,
Or else to make them euer after cease.
And they, except I *Elstride* would release,
(They sayd) and take my *Guendoline* againe,
They would reuenge the wrong or else be slayne.

25.

On this wee met, and valiauntly wee fought
On eyther side, and neither part did yeelde :
So equally they fell, it was great doubt,
Which part should haue the better of the felde.
But I to bolde rusht in with sword and shield,
To breake their rayes, so hasty men get smart,
An arrowe came and stroke mee to the heart.

26.

Thus was I brought to bale, vnhappy, there,
My body pearst that wicked life had led :
When I had raygned all out twenty yeere,
And had my corps with many pleasures fed,
The earth receiu'd my corps as cold as led.
And all my pompe, my pryncely troupe and trayne,
On earth no more shall see their Prince agayne.⁹

⁶ Or. 1575.

⁷ For. N.

⁸ Stura stream. 1575.

⁹ Fabian varies from the other chronicles by stating the death of Locrine as in the life time of Gwendoline's father; as she "beyng sore discontent, excyted her Fader and frēdes to make warre vpon the sayd Lotryne her husbände. In the which warre, lastly, he was slayne when he reigned or ruled Loegria, or Logiers, after the concordance of moste wryters XX yers: And was buried by his Fader

27.

To all estates ¹⁰ let this for wedlocke serue,
 Beware of chaunge, it will not hold out long.
 For who so mindeth from his mate to swerue,
 Shall sure at length receiue reuenge for wrong.
 Tis folly fight with God, h'is farre to strong,
 For though yee coloure all with coate of ryght,
 No fayned fard deceaues ¹ or dimmes his sight,
 Hee guydes the good, and wrekes the wronges of might.²

LENVOY.

1.

THIS is the iustice great of mighty Ioue aboue,
 To plague the men whose fayth vnfirm hee findes,
 The promise plight in sponsales sacred loue,
 Which both alike the Prince and simple subiect bindes,
 Who recklesse breaks that same nor faithed promise mindes,

in the cytie of Troynouant." This might be the authority of our author for relating his burial at Troynouant as the stanza appears in the first edition.

Then was I brought to Troynouant, and there

My body was enterrid as you reade:

When I had raigned all out twenty yere:

Lo thus I liude and thus became I deade:

Thus was my crowne depriued from my heade,

And all my pompe, my princely troupe and trayne,

And I to earth and duste resolude againe. (1575.)

¹⁰ Now warne estates. ib. ¹ No false deceit deceiues. N.

² Edition 1575 has only seven lines in this stanza: it concludes thus

For though ye colour all, with coate of right:

Yet can no fayned farde deceiue his sight.

THE AUTHOUR.

With that this king was vanisht quite and gone,

And as a miste dissolued into ayre:

And I was left with Morpheus all alone,

Who represented straight a Lady faire,

Of frendes depriude and left in deepe dispaire:

As eke she spake, all wet in cordes fast bounde,

Thus tolde she how she was in waters drounde.

If hee ensue the vice, wherein his sence is drounde,
No doubt Iehouah iust will therefore him confounde.

2.

If hee for wedlocke breatch in Pagan Princes then
So greate displeasure tooke, and did them sharply whip,
Will hee not rather nowe afflict such christen men,
As dare the sacred band of holy wedlocke rip?
Hee will not let the twifold faythed christian slip,
Which by so vayne delight in fleshly lustes is droun'd.
He cuts him of, and doth his queanes and him confound.

3.

Examples are in all the ages seene before,
And also daily prooffe declareth well the same.
Wherefore I will of this as nowe resite no more.
Perchaunce I may incurre some vnderuerued blame.
But next beholde on stage apear'd a noble dame,
(Whose beauty braue *Locrinus*' senses did confound)
Declaring how therfore Queene *Guendoline* her droun'd.

HOW QUEENE EL-

stride the Concubine and second wife

of king Locrinus was miserably drowned by Queene

Guendoline, The yeare before Christ.

1064.

1.

AND must I needes my selfe recite my fall,
Poore Pryncesse¹ I: must I declare my fate?

Must I the first of Queenes amongst vs all,²

Shew how I thrise fell from my princely state:

And from the lofty seate on which I sate:

If needes I must, then well content, I will:

Lest here my place in vayne I seeme to fill.

2.

I am that *Elstride* whom *Locrinus* lou'd,

A Prince his daughter, came from *Germanes* land.

My fame of beauty many Princes mou'd³

To sue for grace, and fauoure at my hand.

Which brute once blowne abroad in euery land,

One *Humber*, king of *Hunnes* with all his trayne,

To come to mee a suiter was full fayne.

3.

What neede I tell the giftes to me he gaue,

Or shew his suite, or promise he me plight,

Sith well you knowe a Prince neede nothing craue,

¹ Woman. ed. 1575.

² The first saue three amongst vs all. ib.

³ "Eastrildis so farre excelled in bewtie, that none was then lightly found vnto her comparable, for her skin was so whyte that scarcely the fynest kind of Iuorie that might be found, nor the snowe lately fallen downe from the Elament, or the Lylles did passe the same." *Grafton*.

May nigh commaund ech thing as twere his right.
For as the foule before the Eagles sight,
Euen so we fall, submit, and yeelde vs still
At Prince his call, obeysaunt to his will.

4.

And for that time the *Hunnes* full mighty were,
And did increase, by martiall feates of warre:
Therefore our *Germayne* Kings agast did beare
Them greater fauoure then was neede by farre.
My father durst not *Humber's* hest debarre,
Nor I my selfe, I rather was content
In hope of crowne with *Humber* to consent.

5.

Two Princely dames with me came then away,
He brag'd to winne these countrey partes all three.
We Ladyes rather were + this Prince his pray,
Because he promist that we Queenes should bee.
We came to cost, these countrey coasts to see,
Sith hee on whom our hope did wholly stand,
Was drounde, nam'd *Humber* waters, lost the land.

6.

For as you heard before when he suppos'd
He had wonne all, because he wonne a part,
Strayght way he was agayne thereof depos'd,
Constrayn'd to flye and swim for life, poore heart.
Lo here the cause of all my dolefull smart:
This noble King with whom I came to raygne,
Was drencht, and drounde vnto my greeuous payne.

7.

'Then were his souldiers taken, slayne, or spoylde,
And well were they, that could make suite for life.
Was neuer such an army sooner foylde:

O woefull warre, that flowd'st in flouds of strife,
And card'st not whom thou cut'st with cruell knife!

So,⁵ had not *Venus* fraught my face with hue,
I had no longer liu'd my forme to rue.

8.

But⁶ as I came a captiue with the rest,
My countenaunce did shine as braue as Sunne:
Ech one that sawe my natiue hue, were prest
To yeeld them selues, by beames of beauty wonne.
My fame strayght blowne, to gaze on me they runne,
And sayd I past ech wordly wight, as farre
As *Phæbus* bright excelles the morning starre.

9.

Like as you see in darkes,⁷ if light appeare,
Strayght way to that ech man directs his eye:
Euen so among my captiue mates that were,
When I did speake, or make my playnts with cry,
Then all on me they stared by and by,
Bemoning of my fates and fortune, so,
As they had bin partakers of my woe.

10.

My forme did prayse my plea, my sighes they sued,
My teares enti'st theyr hearts, some ruth to take:
My sobbes in sight a seemely hue reneu'd,
My wringing handes wan suiters shift to make,
My sober southes did cause them for my sake
Me to commend unto their noble King,
Who wil'd they should me into presence bring.

11.

Which when I came, in cordes as captiue bound,
"O King (quoth I) whose power wee feele to strong,
O worthy wight, whose fame to skyes doth sound,
Doe pittie me, that neuer wisht thee wrong!

⁵ Or. ib.⁶ For. ib.⁷ Night. N.⁸ T'whom. N.

Release me, one, thy captiues all among,
Which from my friends by fraude am brought away,
A Prince his daughter, drownde in deepe decay.

12.

“ Now as thou art a Prince thy selfe, of might,
And mayst doe more then I doe dare desire,
Let me (O King) finde fauoure in thy sight,
Asswage somewhat thy deadly wrath and ire.
No part of knighthoode⁹ tis for to require
A Ladyes death thee neuer did offend,
Sith that thy foe hath brought her to this end.

13.

“ But let me rather safely be conuay’d,
O gracious King, once home before I die.
Or let me liue thy simple wayting mayde,¹⁰
If it may please thy royall maiesty.
Or let me raunsome pay for liberty.
But if he¹ minde reuenge of vnwraught ill,
Why spare you *Britannes* this my corps to kill?”

14.

With that the King: “ Good Lady faire, what ist
Thou canst desire or aske but must obtayne?
Eke would to god with all my heart I wist
Best way to ease thee of thy woefull payne.
But if thou wilt, doe here with me remayne.
If not content, conductours shalt thou haue,
To bring thee home, and what thou else wilt craue.”²

⁹ Manhode. ed. 1575.

¹⁰ Or let me on thy Queene be wayting mayde. ib.

¹ Thou. ed. 1575. You. N.

² Omitted stanza from ed. 1575.

As for my Queene as yet I none possesse,
Therefore thou rather maiste vouchsafe to take
That place thy selfe, then waite on her I gesse,
Whose beautie with thy face no match can make:
The Gods denye that I thy heste forsake;
I saue thy life, eke God forbid that I
Should euer cause so fayre a Ladie die.

F

15.

“ O King (quoth I) the gods preserue thy grace,
 The heauens requite thy mercy shew'd to me,
 And all the starres direct thy regall race,
 With³ happy course, long length of yeares to see.
 The earth with fertile fruites enrich so thee,
 That thou maist still like Justice here dispose,
 And euermore treade downe thy deadly foes.”

16.

The noble King commaunded to vnbinde
 Mine armes, and let me lewce, and free at will.⁴
 And afterward such fauoure did I finde,⁵
 That as his Queene I was at elbowe still:
 And I enjoy'd al pleasures at my fill.
 So that they quite had quenched out my thrall,
 And I forgot my former Fortunes all.

17.

Thus loe by fauoure I obtayn'd my suite,
 So had my beauty set his heart on fire,
 That I could make *Locrinus* euen as muite,
 Or pleasaunt as my causes did require.
 And when I knew he could no way retire,
 I prayd he would his fauoure so extend,
 As I might not be blamed in the end.

18.

“ For if (quoth I) you take me as your owne,
 And eke my loue to you hath⁶ constant beene,
 Then let your loue likewise agayne bee showne,
 And wed mee as you may⁷ your spoused Queene.
 If since in mee mislikyng you haue seene
 Then best dep^ut betime, before defame
 Begin to take from *Elstride* her good name.”

³ In. ed. 1575.⁴ Mine armes and giue me libertie at will. N.⁵ With whom such fauour I did after find. N.⁶ Have. ib.⁷ Sayd. ib.

19.

“ No wauering heart (sayd he) *Locrinus* beares,
No fayned flattery shall thy fayth deface :
Thy beauty, birth, fame, vertue, age and yeares,
Constrayne mee both thee and thyne hestes imbrace:⁸
I must of force geue thy requests a place,
For as they doe with reason good consent,
Euen so I graunt thee all thy whole intent.”

20.

Then was the time appoynted and the daye,
In which I should bee wedded to this King.
But in this case his counsayle caus'd a staye,
And sought out meanes at discord vs to bring
Eke *Corinæus* claym'd a former thing,
A precontract was made and full accord
Betweene his daughter and my soueraigne Lord.

21.

And yet the King did geue mee comfort still,
Hee sayd hee could not to ⁹ forsake my loue :
Hee euermore would beare mee all good will,
As both my beauty and deserts did moue.
But still the end doth who is faulty proue :¹⁰
His counsayle at the last did him constrayne
To marry her, vnto my greeuous payne.

22.

At which I could not but with hate repine :
It vexed mee, his mate that should haue beene,
To liue in hate a Prince his concubine,
That euer had such hope to bee his Queene.
The steppes of state are full of woe and teene,¹
For when wee thinke wee haue obtayn'd ² the throne,
Then strayght our pompe and pryde is quite orethrowne.

⁸ Constraineth one mine Elstride to imbrace. N.

⁹ So, in both.

¹⁰ Yet faithlesse in his promise he did proue. N.

¹ i. e. sorrow.

² Attainde. ed. 1575.

23.

Lo twise I fell from hope of Princely crowne:
 First, when vnhappy *Humber* lost his life:
 And next I layd my peacockes pride adowne,
 When I could not be King *Locrinus*' wife.³
 But oft they say the third doth end the strife,
 Which I haue prou'd, therefore the sequel vewe,
 The third payes home, this prouerbe is to true.

24.

The King could not refraine his former minde,
 But vs'd me still, and I my doubtfull yeares
 Did linger on, I knew no shift to finde,
 But past the time full oft with mourning teares.
 A concubine is neuer voyde of feares,
 For if the wife her at aduantage take,
 In rage⁴ reuenge with death she seekes to make.

25.

Likewise I wist if once I sought to flye,
 Or to entreat the King depart I might,
 Then would he strayght be discontent with me.
 Yea if I were pursued vppon the flight,
 Or came deflourd into my father's⁵ sight,
 I should be taken, kept perforce, or slayne,
 Or in my countrey liue in great disdayne.

26.

In such a plight what might a Lady⁶ doe,
 Was euer Princesse poore,⁷ in such a case?
 O wretched wight bewrapt in webbs of woe,
 That still in dread wast tost from place to place,
 And neuer foundest meane to end thy race,
 But still in doubt of death in carking care
 Didst liue a life deuoide of all welfare.

³ Not be Locrinus wife. ed. 1575.⁴ Radge. ib.⁵ Parents. ib.⁶ Woman. ib.⁷ Ladye fayre. ib.

27.

The King perceiuing well my chaunged cheare,
To ease my heart with all deuīs'd deceates,
By secrete wayes I came deuoyde of feare,
In Vaultes, by cunning Masons' crafty feates.
Whereas we safely from the Queene her threats,
Perdy the King and I so vs'd our arte,
As after turn'd vs both to payne and smart.

28.

By him I had my *Sabrine* small, my childe,
And after that his wife her father lost :
I meane he died and shee was strayght exilde,
And I made Queene vnto my care and cost.
For shee went downe to *Cornwall* strayght in post,
And caused all her fathers men to rise
With all the force and strength they might deuise.

29.

My King and hers, with me, gaynst her prepar'd
An army strong, but when they came to fight,
Dame *Guendoline* did wax at length to hard,
And of our King vs both deposed quight,
For from her campe an arrowe sharp did light
Upon his brest, and made him leaue his breath :
Lo thus the⁸ King came by vntimely death.

30.

Then I to late began in vayne to flye,
And taken was presented to the Queene,
Who me beheld with cruell *Tigers*⁹ eie.
“ O queane (quoth shee) that cause of warres hast beene,
And deadly hate, the like was neuer seene,
Come on, for these my handes shall ridde thy life.
And take reuengement of our mortall strife.

* This. ed. 1575.

9 Tygres. ib.]

31.

“ I longed long to bring thee to this bay,¹⁰
 And thou likewise hast sought to suck my bloud:
 Now art thou taken in my spoyle a pray,
 That caus'd my life full long in daunger stood.
 I will both teach thy selfe and others good,
 To breake the bandes of faithfull wedlocke plight,
 And geue thee that which thou deseruest right.

32.

“ O harlot whoare, why should I stay my handes?
 O paynted picture, shall thy lookes thee saue?
 Nay, binde her fast both hande and foote in bandes,
 And let her some straunge kinde of torments haue.
 What strompet stues, think'st, for thou seemest braue,¹
 Or for thy tears, or sighes, to scape my sight?
 My selfe will rather vanquishe thee by fight.

33.

“ Thou rather should'st my vitall breath depriue
 Then euer scape, if none were here but wee,
 But now I will not file my handes to striue,
 Or else to touch so vile a drabe as shee.
 Come on at once, and bring her after me,
 With hand and feete (as I cominaunded) bound,
 And let me see her here, as *Humber*, drown'd.”

34.

A thousand thinges beside shee spake in rage,
 While that a caitiffe did with cords me binde.
 No teares, nor sobbes, nor sighes, might ought asswage
 The gelous Queene or mollifie her minde.
 Occasions still her franticke head did finde,
 And when shee spake her eyes did leame² as fire,
 Shee lookt as pale as chalke, with wrathfull ire.

¹⁰ Day. N.² Seeme. N.¹ What strumpet, think'st, for that thou seemest braue. N.

35.

Ne stoode shee still, but fearcely me defide,
Raung'd vp and downe, and oft her palmes shee strooke.
“ *Locrinus* now (quoth shee) had not thus dide,
If such an harlot whoare hee had not tooke.”
And therewithall shee gaue a *Tiger's* looke,³
That made me quake: “ What lettes (quoth shee) my knife
To ridde this whore, my husbände's second wife.
H'is dead, I liue, and shall I saue her life?”

36.

“ O Queene (quoth I) if pittie none remayne,
But I be slayne or drown'd as *Humber* was:
Then take thy pleasure by my pinching payne,
And let me hence as thou appoyntest passe.
But take some pittie on my childe, alas,
Thou know'st the infant made no fault, but hee⁴
That's dead, and I, therefore reuenge on mee.”

37.

“ No bastards here shall liue to dispossesse
My sonne, (shee sayd) but sith thou soughtest fame,
I will prouide for her a kingdome lesse,
Which shall hereafter euer haue her name.
Thou know'st whereof the name of *Humber* came:
Then so *Sabrina* shall this streame be cal'd,
Sith *Sabrine* me, as *Humber Locrine*, thral'd.

38.

With that my childe was *Sabrine* brought in sight,
Who when shee sawe me there⁵ in bandes to lie,
“ Alas (shee cri'd) what meanes this piteous plight?”

³ Ne stoode she still but with hir handes on syde
Walkte vp and down, and oft hir palmes shee stroke;
“ My husband now (quoth she) had not thus dyde,
“ If such an harlot whore he had not tooke:”
And there withall she gaue me such a looke
As made me quake. ed. 1575.

⁴ Thee. ib.

⁵ Take. ib.

And downe she fell before the Queene, with cry :
 “ O Queene (quoth shee) let me more rather die
 Than shee that's guiltlesse should : for why, thy king
 Did as his captiue her to lewdnes bring.”

39.

Which when I sawe the kindnes of the childe,
 It burst my heart much more then dome of death :
 Poore little lambe, with countenaunce how milde
 Shee pleaded still : and I for want of breath,
 (With woefull teares that lay her feete beneath)
 Could not put foorth a word our liues to saue,
 Or if therefore I might a kingdome haue.

40.

Her piteous plaintes did somewhat death withdraw,
 For as shee long beheld the Queene with teares,
 (Quoth shee) “ Let me haue rigour voyd of lawe,
 In whom the signe of all thy wrath appeares :
 And let me die, my fathers face that beares.
 Sith he is dead, and we are voide of stay,
 Why should I thee for life, or mercy, pray?”

41.

“ My mother may to *Germany* returne,
 Where shee was borne, and if it please thy grace :
 And I may well lie in my father's tombe,
 If thou wilt graunt his childe so good a place.
 But if thou thinke my bloud is farre to bace,
 (Although I came, by both, of princely lyne)
 Then let me haue what shroud thou wilt assigne.”

42.

With that the Queene replide with milder cheere,
 And sayd the childe was wonderous feate,⁶ and wittie :
 But yet shee would not her reuenge forbear,
 “ For why (quoth shee) the prouerbe sayes, that pittie

⁶ Wyse. ed. 1575.

Hath lewdly lost full many a noble Cittie.

Here *Elstride* now ile wreke my greefes on thee,⁷

To die, take leaue, but talke no more to me."

43.

On this my leaue I tooke, and thus I sayd,

" Farewell my countrey, *Germany*, farewell

Adew the place from whence I was conueyd :

Farewell my father, and my friends⁸ there dwell.

My *Humber* droun'd, as I shall be, farewell !

Adew *Locrinus* dead, for thee I die :

Would God my corps might by thy coffine lie.

44.

" Adew my pleasures past, farewell, adew.

Adew the cares and sorowes I haue had.

Farewell my friends that earst for me did sue,

Adew that were to saue my life full glad.

Farewell my⁹ fauning friends I lately had,

And thou my beauty, cause of death, farewell,

As oft as heart can thinke, or tong can tell.

45.

" Adew you heauens, my mortall eyes sha see

No more your lightes and planets all farewell,

And chiefly *Venus* faire that paintedst me,

When *Mercury* his tale to me did tell,

Eke afterwarde when *Mars* with vs did dwell :

And now at last thou cruell *Mars* adew,

Whose dart my life and loue *Locrinus* slewe:

46.

" And must I needes depart from thee, my childe?

If needes I must, ten thousand times farewell.

Poore little lambe, thy friends are quite exilde,

And much I feare thou shalt not long doe well.

⁷ Then *Elstride* now prepare thy selfe therefore. ed. 1575.

⁸ And friends. N.

⁹ The. 1575.

But if they so with boyling rancour swell
 As thee to flea which neuer wroughtest ill,
 How can they stay my stayned corps to kill?"

47.

With that, my *Sabrine's* slender armes imbrast
 Me round, and would not let me so depart.
 "Let me (quoth shee) for her the waters tast,
 Or let vs both togeather end our smart.
 Yea rather rippe you foorth my tender heart:
 What should I liue? But they the childe withdrew,
 And me into the raging streame they threw.

48.

So in the waters as I striu'd to swimme,
 And kept my head aboue the waues for breath,
 Mee thought I sawe my childe would venter in,
 Which cry'd amayne, "O let me take like death."
 The waters streyght had drawne me vnderneath,
 Where diueing, ¹⁰ vp at length agayn rose I,
 And sawe my childe, and cry'd "Farewell, I die!"

49.

Then as my strength was wasted, downe I went,
 Eke so I plunged twice or thrise yet more:
 My breath departed, needes I must relent.
 The waters pearst my mouth and eares so sore,
 And to the botome with such force mee bore,
 That life, and breath, and minde, and sence was gone,
 And I as dead and cold as marble stone.

50.

Lo thus you heare the race of all my life,
 And how I past the pickes of painfull woe:
 How wise I thought to bee a Prince his wife,¹
 And wise was quite depriu'd my² honour fro,
 The third time Queene and felt foule ouerthro.

¹⁰ Striving, ed. 1575. ¹ A Prince's wife. N. ² Myne, ed. 1575.

Let Princely Ladyes vewe mine historie,
Mine haps, and woes, and hatefull desteny.³

51.

Bid them beware, lest beuty them abuse,
Beware of pryde, for haue a fall it must :
And will them Fortune's flattery to refuse,⁴
Her turned⁵ wheele is voyde of steedy trust.
Who reckes no meane, but leaueth all to lust,
Shall finde my wordes as true as I them tell :
Bid them beware⁶ in time, I wish them well.⁷

LENUOYE.

1.

Who here cōsiders *Elstride's* beauty braue was seene :
Her noble birth, the sundry haps shee had :
How many erst the like infortunate haue beene,
Whose forme haue made right noble hearts full sad :
Hee neede not now in loue bee halfe so mad,
Sith beauty is the baite enbaneth many a bower,
A meate too sweete in taste, that sauced is too sower.

2.

It caused *Hercules* to slay th' *Æchalian* King,
And *Deianire* her worthy fere to bane :
It caus'd the *Greekes* their armies forth to bring,
And *Troia* faire to fall, by *Græcians* tane.
It settled here in *Britayne* first the Dane,

³ Then warne all Ladies that howe much more hie
Then their degrees they clime, mo daungers nye. ed. 1575.

⁴ Flattery refuse. N.

⁵ Turning. ed. 1575.

⁶ Then bid beware. ib.

⁷ THE AUTHOURE.

With that she flitted in the ayre abroad,
As twere a miste or smooke dissolued quite,
And or I long on this had made abode,
A virgine smale, appearde before my sight,
For colde and wet eke scarsly moue she might.
As from the waters drownd didering came,
Thus wise hir tale in order did she frame. ed. 1575.

For it of Kingdomes great the warres did oft deuoure :
The prouerbe sayth, sweete meate will haue of sauces sower.

3

Wherefore let noble men beware of beauties grace,
Lest so inflam'd they chaunce to fall thereby.
If they allur'd the *Sirens* sweete embrace,
And ships forsake, the waues are wilde perdy.
The monsters diue, the seas do swell to skye,
The toyling tempests fosse to reauue the vitall power,
While rockes, shelues, sād's, and seas, the woefull wights deuoure.

4.

They may hereby beholde the woefull childrens fall,
Of those which led their liues in lawelesse lust :
And learne to loue their Ladyes best of all,
Which are to them so faithfull, true, and iust.
Wherefore recyte the death of *Sabrina* here I must,
The Lady young, mee thought, from waters droun'd that came :
Which might thus wise her tale haue seem'd to frame.⁸

⁸ Many of the incidents of the preceding lives are united to form the plot of "the lamentable Tragedie of Locrine, the eldest son of King Brutus, discoursinge the warres of the Brittaines," entered in the Stationers Books 1594. The first act shows Brutus sick, making the division of the kingdom among his sons Albanact, Humber, and Locrine. The succeeding acts exhibit their wars on each other, and in the last is that created by Guendoline against Locrine, concluding with his death and those of his concubine and daughter the Lady Sabrina. See Malone's Supplement, Vol II. p. 189. There is also "an old ballad of a duke of Cornwall's daughter," (Guendoline) inserted in Evans's Ballads, 1784, Vol. I. The respective writers appear to have consulted the Mirror for Magistrates. In the persons represented in the play the author has chosen to deviate from all chronicle history by making "Madan, daughter of Locrine and Guendolen."

HOW THE LADY SA- *brine daughter of King Locrinus*

*and Elstride, was drowned by Queene Guen-
doline, the yeare before Christ*

1064.

1.

BEHOLDE mee *Sabrine* orphane erst bereft
Of all my friends, by cruell case of warre :
When as not one to treat for mee was left,
But Ielosie did all their powers debarre.
When as my father eke was slaine in warre,
And when my mother euen before my sight
Was drown'd to death, O wretch in woefull plight.

2.

Trust who so will the staffe of hye estate,
And bring mee word what stay thereby you haue :
For why, if Fortune once displeasure take,
Shee genes the foyle, though lookes bee neuer so braue,
Tis wisdom when you winne, to winne to saue :¹
For oft who trustes to get a Prince his trayne,
Would at the length of begger's life be fayne.

3.

This might the *Hunne* erst *Humber* well haue sayd,
And this my mother *Elstride* prou'd to true,
When as his life by striuing streames was stayd,
And when the tyraunts her in waters threwe.
What I may say, my selfe reportes to you,
Which had more terrour shew'd then twice such twayne :
Geue eare, and iudge if I abode no payne.

¹ Tis wisdom rather then to winne to saue. ed. 1575.

4.

First when my fathers corps was stricken downe

With deadly shaft, I came to mourne and see :

And as hee lay with bleeding brest in sowne,

Hee cast aside his watring eyes on mee.

“ Flye, flye, (quoth hee) thy stepdame² seekes for thee,

My woefull childe : what flight maist thou to take,

My *Sabrine* poore, I must thee needes forsake.

5.

“ See here mine end, behold thy father’s fall,

Fly hence, thy stepdame seekes thy staylesse life :³

Thy mother eke or⁴ this is wrapt in thrall,

You cannot scape of gelous grieve her knife,⁵

Farewell my childe, mine *Elstride* and my wife,

Adew (quoth hee) I may no longer byde : ”

And euen with that hee gasped breath,⁶ and dyde.

6.

What birde can flye, and soare, if stormes doe rage ?

What shippe can sayle if once the windes resist ?

What wight is that can force of warres asswage ?

Or elss what warre can bridle Fortune’s list ?

What man is hee, that dare an hoast resist ?

What woman only dare withstand a field ?

If not, what childe but must to enemies yeelde ?

7.

My father’s souldiers fled away for feare,

As soone as once theyr Captayne’s death they scand :

The Queene proclaym’d a pardon euery where

To those would yeelde, and craue it at her hand :

² Elstride or Astrilde, is described by Robert of Gloucester as the steru Guendoline’s “ bed suster, hire lordis concubine.”

³ Flye, flye, thy gelous stepdame seekes thy life. ed. 1575.

⁴ Eke. N.

⁵ Farewell in woe you cannot scape hir knife. ed. 1575.

⁶ Thryse. ib.

Excepting such as did her ayewithstand.

For so the course alwayes of pardons goes,
As saues the souldier, and entraps the foes.

8.

Then wist I flight could nothing mee preuayle,
I fearde her pardon would not saue my life:

The storme was such I durst not beare a sayle,

I durst not goe t'intreate my father's wife,

Although I neuer was the cause of strife:

For gelosie, deuoyde of reason's raygne,

With frenzyes fume enragde her restles brayne.

9.

But see the chaunce: Thus compast rounde with feare,

In broyles of bloude, as in the fielde I stand,

I wisht to God my corps were any where,

As out of life, or of this hatefull land.

No sooner wisht, but there was euen at hand

A souldier vile: "In haste (quoth hee) come on,

"Queene *Elstride* will, before thou come, begon.

10.

The rascall rude, the roag, the clubfist gripte

My sclender⁷ arme, and pluckt mee on in hast:

And with my robes the bloudy ground hee sweeppte:

As I drue backe hee hal'd mee on full fast.

Vnder his arme my carefull⁸ corps hee cast.

"Sith that (quoth hee) thou put'st mee to this payne,

"Thou shalt thereby at length but little gayne."⁹

⁷ Little. ed. 1575. ⁸ Sclender. ib.

⁹ An omitted stanza from ed. 1575.

Thus throughe the hoste he bare me to my bane,
And shewde the Souldiours what a spoyle he had:

"Loke here (quoth he) the litle Princes tane."

And laught, and ran as brutish butcher mad;

But my lamenting made the souldiours sad,

Yet nought preuailde, the caytife as his pray

Without all pitie bare me still away.

11.

So¹ at the length wee came where wee descri'd
 A number huge of folkes about the Queene :
 As when you see some wonder great betide,
 Or else the place where some straunge sight hath bene :
 So might you there the people standing seene,
 And gazed all when as they see mee brought,
 Then sure I deem'd I was not come for nought.

12.

And in the prease, some prays'd my comely face,
 In beauty *Elstride* which resembled right : ²
 Some sayd I looked like my father's grace,
 But ³ others sayd it was a piteous sight
 I should so dye : the Queene mee pardon might.
 Then sayd the beast ⁴ mee bore did mee abuse,
 Which ⁵ not so rudely ought a Pryncesse vse.

13.

But what did this redresse my woefull care,
 You wotte the commons vse suche prouerbes still :
 And yet the captiues poore no better are,
 It rather helps theyr payned hearts to kill.
 To pittie one in grieve doth worke him ill.
 Bemone his woe, and cannot ease his thrall,
 It killes his heart, but comforts none ⁶ at all.

14.

Thus past wee through the prease : at length wee came
 Into the presence of the gelous Queene,
 Who nought at all the rascall rude did blame
 That bare mee so, but askte if I had seene
 My father slayne, that cause thereof had beene.

¹ Till. ed. 1575.

² Some saide lo Elstride shee resembleth right. *ib.*

³ Some. *ib.*

⁴ Some said the thiefe. *ib.*

⁵ And. *ib.*

⁶ Nought. *ib.*

“ O Queene (quoth I) God knowes my whole intent
Of slaughter guiltlesse: I am innocent.”⁷

15.

With that I sawe the people looke aside,
To vewe a mourning voice: I heard thereby
It was my woefull mother by, that cry’d
“ Lo *Sabrine*, bound at brinke of death I lie.”
What pen, or tongue, or teares with weeping eye
Could tell my woes, that sawe my mother bound
On waters shoare, wherein shee should bee droun’d!

16.

With that I fell before the Queene, and pray’d
For mercy, but with fierie eyes shee bent
Her browes on mee: “ Out bastard vile (shee sayd)
Thou wot’st not yet wherefore for thee I sent.”
“ O Queene (quoth I) haue pittie, bee content,
And if thou minde of mercy ought to showe,
Drowne mee, and let my mother harmelesse goe.

17.

“ For why, shee was a Prince his daughter, borne
In *Germany*, and thence was brought away
Perforce, by *Humber*, who by warres forlorne
Thy King as captiue tooke her for his pray.
Thou mayst full well her case with reason weye.
What could shee doe, what more then shee or I
Thy captiues now, thine owne to liue or die?

18.

“ Take pittie then on Princely race, O Queene,
Haue⁸ pittie, if remorse may ought require,
Take pittie, on a captiue thrise hath beene,

⁷ “ O Queene (quoth I) God knowes me innocent,
To worke my father’s death I neuer ment.” ed. 1575.

* Take. ib.

Let pittie pearce the rage of all thine ire.
 But if thy breast burne with reuenging fire,
 Then let my death quench out that fuming flame,
 Sith of thy husband's bloud and hers I came."

19.

Much more I sayd while teares out streaming went,
 But nought of ease at all thereby I gayn'd.
 My mother eke, did, as shee lay, lament,
 Wherewith my heart a thousand fold shee payn'd.
 And though the Queene my playnts to fauour fayn'd,
 Yet at the last shee bad shee should prepare
 Her selfe to die, and end her course of care.

20.

Then all her friends my mother *Elstride* nam'd,
 And pleasures past, and bade them all adue :
 Eke as shee thus her last farewell had fram'd,
 With losse of him from whom her sorowes grue.
 At length to mee (which made my heart to rue)
 Shee sayd : " Farewell my childe, I feare thy fall,
 " Ten thowsand times adue, my *Sabrine* small."

21.

And as the cruell caytiffes came to take
 Her vp, to cast and drowne her in the floud,
 I fast mine armes about her clipt did make,
 And cry'd, " O Queene let mercy meeke thy moode,
 Doe rather reauue my heart of vitall bloud,
 Then thus I liue : " with that they slakt my hold,
 And drencht my mother in the waters cold.

22.

For loue to ayde her, venter in would I,
 That sawe my mother striue aloft for winde.
 To land shee lookte and sayd : " Farewell, I die !"
 " O let mee goe (quoth I) like fate to finde !"
 Sayd *Guendoline* : " Come on likewise, and binde

This *Sabrina* here likewise, for so shall shee
At once receiue⁹ her whole request of mee.

23.

“ Eke as I wish to haue in minde her fame,
As *Humber's* is, which should her father beene :
So shall this floude of *Sabrina* haue the name,
That men thereby may say, a righteous Queene
Here drown'd her husband's childe of concubine.
Therefore leaue *Sabrina* here thy name and life,
Let *Sabrina* waters end our mortall strife.”

24.

“ Dispatch !” (quoth shee :) With that they bound mee fast,
My slender armes and feete, with ¹ little neede :
And sans all mercy, mee in waters cast,
Which drewe mee downe, and cast mee vp with speede,
And downe mee drencht the *Sabrina* fish to feede :
Where I abode till now from whence I came,
And there the waters hold as yet my name. ²

25.

Lo thus this gelous Queene, in raging sort,
With bloudy hate bereft her husband's health :
And eke my mother *Elstride's* life (God wot)
Which neuer ment to hurt this common wealth.
And mee, *Locrinus'* childe, begot by stealth :
Agaynst all reason was it for to kill
The childe, for that her parents erst did ill.

⁹ This *Sabrina* hand and foote ; at once let see
Her here receyue. ed. 1575.

¹ Which. ib.

² Guendoline “ made a proclamation throughout all the whole realme of Briteyn that the same water should be euermore called Habren, after the maydens name, for so euen at this day is *Seuerne* called in the Welsh tongue. And this did she as one desirous to make thereby the name of the yong mayden immortall, because she was her housband's daughter.” *Grafton.*

26.

But here³ you see, what time our pompe doth hyde,
 Hereby you see th'vnsteady trust in warre,
 Hereby you see the stay of states etride,
 Hereby you see, our hope to make doth marre,
 Hereby you see, wee fall from bench to barre.

From bench,⁴ (quoth I) yea from the Princely seate,
 You see how soone vs Fortune downe doth beate.

27.

And here you see, how lawlesse loue doth thriue,
 Hereby you see, how gelous folkes doe fare :
 Here may you see, with wisdom they that wiue,
 Neede neuer recke *Cupidoe's* cursed snare,
 Here may you see, deuorcement breedeth care,
 Here seldome thriue the children may you see,⁵
 Which in vnlawfull wedlocke gotten bee.

28.

Declare thou then our fall and great mishap,
 Declare the hap, and glory wee were in :
 Declare how soone wee taken were in trap,
 When wee suppos'd wee had most safest bin.
 Declare what losse they haue that hope to win.
 When Fortune most doth sweetely seeme to smile,⁶
 Then will shee froune : she laughes but euen a while.⁷

³ By this. ed. 1575.⁴ Hence. ib.⁵ Here may you see, the children seldome thee. ib.⁶ Farewell, and tell when Fortune most doth smile. ib.⁷ THE AUTHOUR.

With that the Lady Sabrine slinckt from sight,
 I lookt about and then me thought againe
 Approched straight another wofull wight :
 It seemde as though with dogs he had bin slaine ;
 The blood from all his members torne amaine
 Ran downe : his clothes were also torne and rente,
 And from his bloody throte these plaintes he sente. ed.1575.

LENUOY.

1.

A woefull thing mee thought this tale to heare,
That pittie could not moue *Queene Guendoline*,
When *Locrine* both and *Elstride* ended were,
Which had committed facts adulterine,
Th'adulter slayne and eke his concubine,
Not so her cruell minde could bee content,
But in reuenge to slay the Innocent.

2.

What maruayle though shee were of such a minde,
So cruell not to spare her husband's bastard small:
Sith that of gelosie wee often finde
Examples passing reason naturall.
Of *Porrex* mother, reade the life who shall,
Which slew her only sonne, eke *Progne* was content,
To sley her sonne an harmelesse Innocent.

3.

Medæa eke when *Iason* her forsooke,
And children twayne, which yong by him shee had,
Full cruelly a sword in hand shee tooke,
Rest both their liues, as cruell monster mad.
Was not *Agaue's* cruelty so bad,
Which *Pentheus* her sonne to sley could bee content.
Because hee nilde to *Bacchanalls* assent?

4.

I will no more of these as now recite,
Whose cruelty deserued all disgrace:
Nor yet in generall thus wise I write,
The worthy sexe of women to deface.
Tis gelosie reproued here in place.
But now I turne to *Madan* all to rent,
Which next on stage thus wise to talke him bent.

HOW KING MADAN

for his euill life was slayne by Wolues,

The yeare before Christ,

1009.

1.

AMONG'ST the rest that sate in hauty seat,
And felt the fall, I pray thee pen for mee
A Tragedy, may some such wisdom geat
As they may learne, and somewhat wiser bee :
For in my glasse when as themselues they see,
They may beware ; my fall from Fortune's lap
Shall teach them how, t'eschew the like mishap.

2.

I am that *Madan*, once of¹ *Britayne* King,
The² third that euer raygned in this land :
Marke well therefore my death, as straunge a thing
As some would deeme could scarce with reason stand ;
Yet when thou hast my life well thoroughly scand,
Thou shalt perceauce not halfe so straunge as true,
Ill life, worse death, doth after still ensue.

3.

For when my mother *Guendoline* had raygn'd
In my nonage full xv yeares, shee dide :
And I but yong, not well in vertues trayn'd,
Was left this noble Iland for to guide ;
Whereby when once my minde was pufte with pryde,
I past for nought, I vs'd my lust for lawe ;
Of right, or iustice, reckte I not a strawe.

¹ That, ed. 1575.

² Was. ib.

4.

No meane I kept but ruled all by rage,
No boundes of measure could mee compasse in.
No counsayle could my meekelesse minde asswage :
When once to fume I fearcely did begin,
And I excelde in nothing else but sinne;
So that my subiects all did wish my end,³
Saue such to whom for vice I was a friend.

5.

In⁴ pleasures plung'd I tooke my whole repast,⁵
My youth mee led deuoyde of compasse quite :
And vices were so rooted in at last,
That to recure the euill it past my might.
For who so doth with will and pleasure fight,
(Though all his force doe striue them to withstand)
Without good grace they haue the vpper hand.

6.

What licoure first the earthen pot doth take,
It keepeth still the sauour of that same.
Full hard it is a Cramocke⁶ straight to make,
Or crooked Logges with wainscot fine to frame.
Tis hard to make the cruell Tiger tame.
And so it fares with those haue vices caught :
Naught once (they say) and euer after naught.

7.

I speake not this as though it past all cure
From vices vile to vertue to retire :
But this I say, if vice be once in vre,

³ Durst none aduenture anger mine t' aswage
If once to freate and fume I did begin;
And I excelde in nothing els but sinne,
So that wel nighe all men did wishe my ende. ed. 1575.

⁴ And. N.

⁵ In pleasures pleasaunt was my whole repaste. ed. 1575.

⁶ This seems a provincial word, as crome is used in Norfolk for a hook. See *Grose's Glossary*.

The more you shall to quite your selfe require,
 The more you plunge your selfe in fulsome mire,
 As hee that striues in soakte quicke sirts⁷ of sand,
 Still sinkes, scarce euer⁸ comes agayne to land.

8.

The giftes of grace may nature ouercome,
 And God may graunt the time when wee repent.
 But I did still in laps of lewdnes runne :
 At last my selfe to cruelty I bent.
 But who so doth with bloudy acts content
 His minde, shall sure at last finde like agayne,
 And feelee for pleasures thousand panges of payne.

9.

For in the mid'st of those vntrusty toyles,
 When as I nothing fearde, but all was sure,
 With all my trayne, I hunting rode for spoiles
 Of those, who after did my death procure.
 These lewde delightes did boldly mee allure
 To follow still and to pursue the chase :
 At last I came into a desert place.

10.

Besette with hills, and monstrous rockes of stone,
 My company behinde mee lost, or stayed :
 The place was eke with hauty trees oregrowne,
 So wist⁹ and wylde it made mee halfe afrayd.
 And strayght I was with rauening wolues betrayd,
 Came out of caues, and dennes, and rockes amayne.
 There was I rent in peeces, kild, and slayne.

11.

Woe worth that youth (in vayne) so vily spent
 Should euer cause a King to feelee such smart :
 Woe worth that euer I should here lament,
 Or shew the hurt of my poore Princely heart.

⁷ Syrtes, a quicksand or bog. *Johnson.*

⁸ Neuer. ed. 1575.

⁹ Vast. N.

I thinke the clowne that driues the mixen cart
Hath better hap then Princes, such as I:
No storme of Fortune castes him downe so hie,

12.

A man by grace and wit may shunne the snare.
Tis sayd a wise-man all mishap withstands.
For though by starres wee borne to mischiues are,
Yet grace and prudence bayles our carefull bandes.
Ech man (they say) his fate hath in his handes,
And what hee marres, or makes to leese, or saue
Of good or euill, is euen selfe doe selfe haue.

13.

This thing is seene by mee, that led my daies
In vitious sort, for greedy wolues a pray.
I wish, and will, that Princes guide theyr wayes:
Lo, here by this eschew like chaunce they may,
And vices such as worke their whole decay.
Which if they doe, full well is spent the time
To warne, to write, and eke to shun the crime.¹

¹ The conclusion of this life, from stanza 11, is thus varied in ed. 1575.

Alas that youth (in vayne) so vyly spent,
Should euer cause a king to haue such ende:
Alas that euer I should here lament,
Or else should teache vnto my cost my frende:
Alas that fortune such mishap should sende:
But sithe it is to late for me to crie,
I wishe that others may take hede herebye.

I might full well by wisdom shund this snare,
Tis sayde a wiseman all mishap withstandes.
For though by starres we borne to mischieues are:
Yet prudence bayles vs quite from carefull bandes,
Eche man (they say) his fate hath in his handes,
And what he makes, or marres to lese, or saue
Of good, or euill, is euen selfe do selfe haue.

As here thou seest by me, that led my dayes
In vicious sorte, for greedy wolues a praye:
Warne others wysely, than to guide their wayes
By mine example, wel eschue they may,
Such vices as may worke their own decay:

LENUOY.

1.

Thus haue you here the end of *Madan*² seene,
 (If it were hee) and yet I may suspect
 It was some other Prince so seru'd had beene,
 For that all stories doe not so detect
 His death that Princely vertues did neglect.
 But if hee died by wolues, as here I write,
 His vice the cause mine author doth resite.

Which if they do, full well is spent the time
 To warne, to wryte, and eke to reade this rime.

THE AUTHOR.

When this was said, no more was Madan seene,
 (If it were he) but sure I half suspecte
 It was some other else, so seru'de had bene,
 For that all stories do not so detecte
 His death, or else I did perhaps neglecte
 His tale, bicause that diuers stories brought,
 Such fancies of his death into my thought.

Therefore although it be not as some write
 Here pende by me, and yet as others haue :
 Let it not greeue thee reade that I recite,
 And take what counsaile of good life he gaue :
 I trust I may (that dreame) some pardon craue,
 For if the reste, no dreames but stories pen :
 Can I for that they wryte be blamed then ?

No sure, I thinke the readers will not giue
 Such captious dome, as Momus erste did vse,
 Though Zoilus impes as yet do carping liue :
 And all good willing writers much misuse.
 Occasion biddes me some such beastes accuse,
 Yet for their bawling hurtes me not I nill :
 But with my purpose, on procede I will.

Next after that, came one in princely raye
 A worthy wight but yonge, yet felt the fall :
 It seemde he had bene at some warlike fraye,
 His breste was woundid wide and bloudy all :
 And as to mynde he musde his factes to call,
 Depe sighes he fet, made all his limmes to shake :
 At length these wordes, or like to me he spake.

² Madan had reigned forty years. Fabian says there is "lytell or no memory made (of him) by any wryters." As a strict conservator of laws and for "great sapience," he is briefly eulogised by Harding.

2

Wherefore although that authors heere dissent,
 And I haue pen'd as praysed stories haue :
 To reade his warnings thou maist bee content,
 And take what counsaile of good life hee gaue.
 I trust, I (dreaming) may some pardon craue,
 For if the rest no dreames but stories pen,
 Can I for that they write bee blamed then ?

3.

But what neede I on this to longer stay,
 Sith many moe remayne which felt the fall.
 Of *Britayne* Princes heathen reade you may,
 As *Maline* one appearing next of all :
 Whose tale in order now resite I shall.
 Then here conceiue this wounded Prince you see,
 Thus wise, of Fortune, speaking vnto mee.

HOW KING MALIN

was slayne by his brother King

Mempricius, the yeare before Christ,

1009.

I.

If fortune were so firme as shee is fraile,
Or glosing glory were still permanent :
If no mishap mens doings did assaile,
Or that their acts and facts were innocent :
If they¹ in hope no hurt nor hatred ment,
Or dealings aye were done with duty due,
They neuer neede theyr great² misfortunes rue.

2.

If pompe were payne, and pride were not in price,
Or hauty seate had not the highest place :
If they³ could learne by others to bee wise,
Or else eschewe the daungers of their⁴ face :
If once they⁵ could the golden meane imbrace,
Or banish quite ambition from their⁶ breast,
They⁷ neuer neede to recke or reape vnrest.

3.

But they doe thinke⁸ such sweetenes in renowne,
They⁹ deeme on earth is all the greatest hap :¹
They² nothing feare the hurt of falling downe,
Or little rome in Lady Fortune's lap.
They³ geue no heede before they³ get the clap :

¹ We. ed. 1575.

² We neuer could our great. ib.

³ We. ib.

⁴ Our. ib.

⁵ We. ib.

⁶ Our. ib.

⁷ We. ib.

⁸ But O we thinke. ib.

⁹ We. ib.

¹ Vppon this earth is all the greatest hap. N.

² We. ed. 1575.

³ We. ib.

And then to late they ⁴ wish they ⁴ had bin wise,
When from the fall they ⁵ would, and cannot, rise.

4.

As if two twinnes, or children at the teate
Of nurce, or mother, both at once might bee,
And both did striue the better duggie to geat,
Till one were downe, and slipt beside her knee :
Even so it fares, by others as by mee, ⁶

In Fortune's lap they ⁷ haue so little hold,
She cannot stay both striuing if shee would.

5.

I am that *Malin*, ⁸ one of *Madan's* sonnes,
Which thought to raygne and rule this noble Ile,
And would so done, but see what chaunce there com es
Where brethren loue and frendship quite exile :
Who thinkes in trust no treason neither guile,
Is soonest cleane bereau'd of life and all, ⁹
In steade of rule hee reapes the crop of thrall.

6.

My yongest ¹ brother then *Mempricius* hight,
Whose hauty minde, and mine, were still at square : ²
Wee euermore as foes hight other spite,
And deadly ire in hatefull heartes wee bare.
Hee sought all wayes hee might to worke mee care,
And ech regarded others enuy, so,
As after turned both to paynfull woe.

⁴ We. ed. 1575.

⁵ We. ib.

⁶ And by me. ib.

⁷ We. ib.

⁸ Manlius. ib.

⁹ Who thinkes an other of his right beguyle,
Himselfe is soonest cleane bereaude of all. ib.

¹ My elder brother. ib. The authority for making this variation was probably Harding, to whose work Higgins may refer as "an old chronicle in a kind of English verse." (See p. 7.) Harding says, "the yonger Memprise slewe his brother Maulyne, elder of age." The other writers seem uniform in describing Mempricius as the elder.

² Did euer square. ib.

7.

Because my father lou'd him well,³ therefore
 I fear'd my brother should obtayne my right:⁴
 Likewise on fauoure boldned hee him bore,⁵
 And neither had in vertue's wayes delight.
 What neede I here our inward griefes recite?
 Wee, not as brethren, liu'd in hatred still,
 And sought occasion other each to kill.

8.

I hauing hope for to preserue the crowne,⁶
 And hee for that hee feard my title⁷/bred
 Such frendship as might alwayes keepe him downe
 And both depriue him of his crowne and head.
 But when it chaunst our father once was dead,
 Then strayght appeared all his⁸ enuy playne:
 For hee could not from his⁹ attempt refrayne.¹

9.

Some wisht wee should depart the realme in twoo,
 And sayd my father eke was of that minde:
 But nether of vs both, that so would doe,
 Wee were not ech to other halfe so kinde.
 And vile ambition made vs both so blinde,
 Wee thought our raygne could not bee sure and good,
 Except the ground thereof were layd with bloud.

³ Lou'd me well. ed. 1575.

⁴ My brother feared I should haue his right. ib.

⁵ I me bore. ib.

⁶ I for because I might obtaine the crowne. ib.

⁷ Fauoure. ib. ⁸ Our. ib.

⁹ And I could not from mine. ib.

¹ An additional stanza occurs here in the first edition.

See here, th' occasion of my haplesse happe,

See here his chaunce that might haue liu'de ful wel:

So baited swete is euery deadly trappe;

In brauiste bowres doth deepest daunger dwell.

I thought mine elder from his right t'expell,

Though he both age and custome forth did bring

For title right: I sayd, I would be King.

10.²

At last a time of parle appoynted³ was,
 And truce concluded for our titles right :
 Wherein I hoped might bee brought to passe
 That I enioy in peace my kingdome might.
 But secretly by pollecy and sleight
 Hee slewe mee with his swoord, before I wist :
 Where crowne, peace, kingdome, life and all I mist.⁴

11.

Thus was I by my wicked⁵ brother slayne,
 Which with my death his cruell eyes did fill.⁶
 This oftentimes they vse to get and gayne,
 That cannot shunne misfortune as they wil.⁷
 Was neuer man pretended such an ill,
 But God to him like measure shortly sent,
 As hee to others erst before had ment.

12.

Vniustice euer thriues as theues doe thee,
 And bloudthirst cryes for vengeaunce at his hand,

² Instead of the tenth stanza the following are in the first edition.

Wherefore as eache did watch conuenient time,
 For to commit this haynous bloody facte;
 My selfe was taken not accusde of crime,
 As if I had offendid any acte,
 But he as one that witte and reason lackte,
 Sayde traytour vile thou art to me vntrue;
 And therwithall his bloody blade he drewe.
 Not like a king but like a cut throte fell;
 Not like a brother, like a butcher brute;
 Though twere no worse then I deserued well,
 He gaue no time to reason or dispute:
 To late it was to make for life my suite,
 "Take traytoure here (quoth he) thy whole deserte,"
 And therwithall he thrust me to the harte.

³ Chosen. N.

⁴ "Lastly by medyacions of frends a day of communycacion in lounge maner attwene these ii bretherne was appoynted, at which day of assemble Mempricius by treason slewe his brother Manlius." *Fabyan.*

⁵ Brutishe.

⁶ Which likewyse went my brother for to kill. *ib.*

⁷ Which do inuente anothers bloud to spill. *ib.*

Which all our rights and wronges doth dayly see⁸
 The good to aide, and gracelesse to withstand ;
 If either vice or vertue wee aband,
 Wee either are rewarded as wee serue,
 Or else are plaged, as our deedes deserue.

13.

Let this my warning then suffice ech sort,
 Bid them beware : example here you see :
 It passeth play, 'tis tragicall disport
 To clime the steppes of stately high degree.⁹
 For though they thinke good Fortune seru'd not mee,
 Yet did shee vse mee as shee vs'd the rest :
 And so full oft shee¹ serueth euen the best.²

LENUOY.

1.

This was mee thought that time the ruefull tale,
 That *Maline*³ drewe from out his wounded breast.
 A woefull thing to heare the Prince's bale.

⁸ Vsurping wrong incurres the curse of heauen,
 And blood cries out for vengeance at his hand,
 Who still in care of humane good is giuen. N.

⁹ A step aboue their owne degree. ed. 1575.

¹ I think she. ib.

² THE AUTHOURE.

When Manlius had thus endid quite his tale,
 He vanishte out of sight as did the reste ;
 And I perceiued straight a persone pale,
 Whose throte was torne and blodied all his breste :
 " Shali I" (quoth he) " for audience make requeste,
 No sure it nedes not, straunge it semes to thee,
 What he that beares this rentid corps should bee.

" Wherefore I deeme thou canst not chuse but bide,
 And here my tale as others erste before ;
 Sith by so straunge a meanes thou seest I dyde,
 With rentid throte and breste, thou musist more ;
 Marke well (quoth he) my ratling voyce therefore :"

And therewithall this tale he gan to tell,
 Which I recite, though nothing nere so well. ed. 1575.

³ In the first edition always called Manlius.

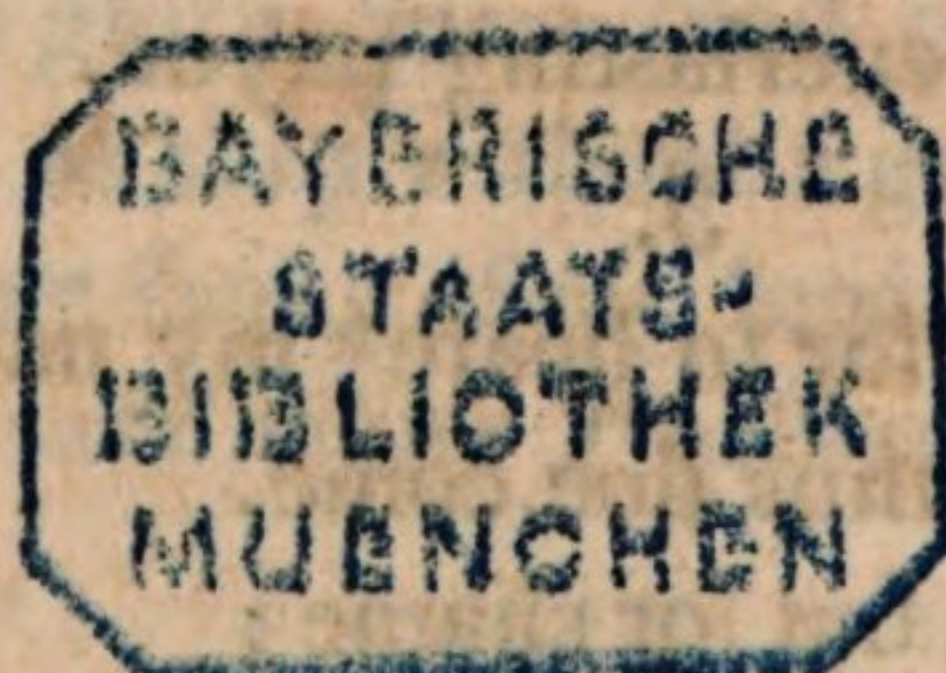
Should by his brother boldly bee addrest:
 But yet wee see such rage in tyrants rest,
 If they may beare alofte alone the sway,
 For Kingdomes sake they care not whom they slay.

2.

Examples are King *Porrex* of this thing,
 The *Romish Antonine* did euen the same:
 But what neede I of these examples bring:
 Such tyrants euer yet deserued blame,
 And haue procur'd them selues, beside defame,
 Not only after shorter time of sway,
 But most they were by others made away.

3.

Now here *Mempricius* which his brother slew
 Was after King, as plainely stories tell:
 Whose filthy facts all princes ought eschew,
 And subiects eke, that hope to prosper well.
 Hee next appear'd declaring how hee fell,
 Eke how his brother deare hee made away,
 And how the *Wolues* in hunting did him slay.



H O W K I N G M E M-

pricius geuen to all lust was deuoured

by wolues, the yeare before Christ,

989.

1.

Tis often sayd, a man should doe likewise
 To other, as hee would to him they did.
 Do as thou would'st bee done to, sayth the wise,
 And doe as conscience and as iustice bid.
 Ther's no man ought for rule¹ an other rid,²
 Nor yet³ his hands⁴ with cruell bloud distayne:
 For bloud doth alwayes cry for bloud againe.

2.

Eke lustfull life, that sleepes in sinnes of sinne,
 Procures a plague: fie, fie, on *Venus* vile:
 Wee little wot the mischiefes are⁵ therein,
 When wee with poysons sweete our selues beguyle.
 The pleasures passe, the ioyes indure but while,
 And nought thereby at all wee get or gayne,
 But dreadfull death, and euerlasting payne.

3.

Mee thinkes thou harkenest for to heare⁶ my name,
 And musest what I am that thus doe come.
 I would or this haue told it, but for shame:
 And yet to giue example here to some,⁷
 I will no longer fayne my selfe so dome,

¹ But he that myndes for rule. ed. 1575.² For empire as I did. N.³ Must not. ed. 1575.⁴ His impious hands. N.⁵ Is. ed. 1575.⁶ Lookist for to haue. ib.⁷ Wherefore to giue example yet to som. ib.

But euen as others I will tell my fall:⁸

Take here my name, my life, my death and all.

4.

I am *Mempricius*, *Madan's* yonger⁹ sonne,
Once King of *Britayne*, that my brother slewe:
Whereby the crowne, and Kingdome all I won,
And after norisht vices moe that grewe,
Not nature's lawes, nor God's, nor man's I knewe,
But liu'd in lust, not recking any thing,
I deemed all thinges lawfull¹ for a King.

5.

Fyrst² when I had my brother brought on beire,
I thought in rest to keepe the Kingdome long:
And I was voyde of doubte,³ I had no feare,
Was none durst checke mee did I right or wrong.
I liu'd at large, and thought my powre so strong,
There could no man preuaile against my will,
In steede of lawe that vsed rigour still.⁴

6.

Then wickedly I fell⁵ to slouthfull ease,
A vice that breades a number moe beside.
I was so testy none durst mee displease,
And eke so puffed with glory, vaine, and pride.
My sencelesse sence, as ship without a guide,
Was tost with euery fancy of my braine,
Like *Phæbus* chariote vnder *Phaëton's* raigne.

⁸ But sith I must as others tell their fall. ed. 1575.

⁹ Eldest. ib.

¹ I deemde was nought vnlawfull. ib.

² For. ib.

³ I was deuoid of doubt. N.

⁴ After attaining the crown he "became so lyther a man, that he destroyed wthin a whyle all the men of his londe." *Chr. of St. Albans*.

⁵ So after that I felle. ed. 1575.

7.

I deem'd them foes that mee good counsaile gaue,
 And those my chiefest frends could glose and lie:
 I hated them that were so sage and graue,
 And those I lou'd were lusty, lewde, and slie.
 I did the wisest wittes as fooles defie,
 Such sots, knaues, ruffians, roysters I embraste,
 As were vnwise, vnbonest, rude, vnchaste.

8.

I lusted eke, as lazy⁶ lechers vse,
 My subiects wiues and daughters at my will
 I did so often as mee pleas'd abuse,
 Perforce I kept them at my pleasure still.
 Thus gate I queanes and concubines at fill,
 And for their sakes I put away my wife:
 Such was my lewdnes, lust, and lawlesse life.

9.

But shame forbids mee for to tell the rest,
 It mee abhorres to shew what did insue:
 And yet because it moueth in my breast
 Compunction still, and was God wot to true,
 Ile farder tell whence⁷ my destruction grue.
 To *Sodome* sinne I fowly fell,⁸ and than
 I was despised both of God and man.

10.

Could I long prosper thus, doe you suppose?
 Might ought of euill exceede⁹ these vices told?
 Thinke you ther's any wight on ground that goes
 Might scape reuenge of vice so manifold?
 No sure: who is in sienfullnes so bolde,
 His vices fare like weedes they sproute so fast
 They kill the corps, as weedes the corne at last.

⁶ Lothsome. ed. 1575.⁷ I will declare whence. ib.⁸ Alas I fell. ib.⁹ Might any ill exceed. ib.

11.

My greate outrage, my heedelesse head, the life
I beastly led could not continue so:
My brothers bloud, my leauing of my wife,
And working of my friends and subiects woe
Cry'd still to God, for my foule ouerthroe,
Which heares the wrong'd, hee vewes¹ their carefull case,
And at the length doth all their foes deface.

12.

Yet I mistrusting no mishaps at hand,
(Though I were worthy twenty times to die)
I lewdly liu'd, and did my wealth withstand.
I neuer thought my end was halfe so nie.
For my disport I rode on hunting, I,
In woodes the fearefull heart I chased fast,
Till quite I lost my company at last.

13.

And or I wist, to cost I found my foes,
By chaunce I came whereas the Wolues they bred:
Which in a moment did mee round inclose,
And mounted at my horse his throte and head.
Some on the hinder partes their panches fed.
Yet fought I still to scape, if it might bee,
Till they my panting² horse puld downe with mee.

14.

Then was I hopelesse to escape their iawes,
They fastned all their holders fast on mee:
And on my royall robes they set their clawes:
My Princely presence, nor my high degree
Moou'd them no more obeysaunt for to bee,
Nor of my corps to take no more remorse,
Then did the greuous groning of my horse.

¹ Heedes. ed. 1575.

² Fainted. ib.

YOU. 15.

But rauenously they rent my breast and throte,
 Forsooke my steede, came all at once and tare
 My kingly³ corps, from which they fleyde my coate,
 And of my flesh they made at all no spare,
 They neuer left mee till my bones were bare.

Lo thus I slewe my brother, left my wife,
 Liu'd vilely, and as vilely ended life.

16.

Beware of bloody broyles, beware of wrong,
 Embrace the counsaile of the wise and sage:
 Trust not to power though it bee nere so strong,
 Beware of rashnes rude and roysters rage.
 Eschew vile *Venus*' toyces, shee cutts of age,
 And learne this lesson of and tell thy friend,
 By pockes, death sodayne, begging,⁴ harlots end.⁵

³ Tender. ed. 1575.

⁴ By sudden death, pockes, begging. N.

THE AUTHOR.

On this me thought he vanisht quite away,
 And I was left with Morpheus all alone:
 Whom I desirde these gryzely ghostes to stay,
 Till I had space to heare them one by one.
 And euen with that was Somnus seruauant gone,
 Whereby I slept and toke mine ease that night,
 And in the morning rose their tale to wrighte.

Nowe (Reader) if you thinke I miste my marke,
 In any thing whilere but stories tolde:
 You must consider that a simple clarke,
 Hath not such skill theeffect of things t'vnfolde,
 But may with ease of wiser be controlde:
 Eke who so writes as much the like as this,
 May hap be deemde likewyse as much to misse.

Wherefore if these may not content your minde
 As eche man cannot fauour all mens vaines:
 I pray you yet let me this frendship finde,
 Giue your good will, I craue nought els for paines.
 Which if you grutch as to great a gaines:
 Then is my loue to you, and labour lost,
 And you may learne take heede, with greater cost.

LENUOY.

I.

Marke but the end of brother quellers all,
 And you shall see what woefull ends they had:
 For so *Iehouah* suffers them to fall,
 As were their risinges murderous and bad,

But now me thinkes I heare the carpers tell,
 Saith one, the writer wanted wordes to fill:
 The next reprov'd the verse not couched well:
 The third declares, where lackte a point of skill:
 Some others say they like the meeter ill:

But what of this? shall these dismay mee quite?
 No sure, I will not cease for such to write.

For with more ease, in other workes they finde
 A fault, then take vpon them selues to pen
 So much, and eke content eche readers minde:
 How should my verse craue all their likings then?
 Sith sondry are the sects of diuers men,

I must endeouour only those to please:
 Which like that comes, so it be for their ease.

The rest I recke as they blame worthy bee,
 For if the words I wrote for good intent:
 Take other sence then they receiue of mee,
 Be turnde to worse, torne, reached, rackt, or rent
 Or hackt and hewde, not constret as I ment:
 The blame is theirs, which with my workes so mell:
 Lesse faulty he, that wisht his country well.

If some be pleasse and easde, I lease no toyle,
 At carpers gyrdle hanges not all the keyes:
 What price gaines he, that gives him fall or foyle,
 Which neuer wan by wrastling any prayse,
 I haue not spent in poetrye my dayes,
 Some other workes in proase I printed haue:
 And more I write for which I leysure saue.

And for mine age not thirty yeares hath past,
 No style so ripe can younger yeares attaine.
 For of them all, but only ten the last,
 To learne the tongues, and write I toke the paine,
 If I thereby receiued any gaine,
 By Frenche or Latine chiefly which I chose,
 These fīue yeares past by writing I disclose.

The life of wicked *Cayne* was sorrowfull and sad.

Of *Ioram* the King what neede I to discriue,
So infamous and violent both dead and eke aliue.

2.

What auayl'd it *Memprice* this Kingdome to obtayne,⁶

That shamefully his Princely brother so did slay:

Sith that Almighty *Ioue* so punisht him agayne,

For scepter's sake that tooke his noble Prince away.

His wretched cruell corps became for Wolues a pray.

What neede I more the caytiues beastly facts descriue,

So infamous and violent, both dead and eke aliue.

Of which, the first two yeares I Grammer taught:

The other twaine, I Hulcets worke enlargde:

The last translated Aldus phrases fraught

With eloquence, and toke of Terence charge

At Printers hande, to adde the flowers at large

Which wanted there, in Vdalles worke before:

And wrote this booke with other diuers more.

Then pardon whats amisse, a while giue eare,

So shall you heare the rest that I recite,

Describing next what Princes did appeare:

When I had ended these are past to wrighte.

In slomber as I chaunst to lye one night,

Was Somnus prest, whom I desyrde to sende

His Morpheus ayde, these Tragedies to ende.

Wherewith he graunted my request and calde

For Morpheus straight: which knew wherto he came

I will (quoth he) the rest, whom Fortune thralde

Of Britaynes shewe: thy selfe to heare them frame.

And therewithall he set forth one like Fame.

In fethers all with winges so finely dight,

As twere a birde, in humaine shape of flight.

Yet twas not Fame that femme of painted plume,

He rather seemed Icarus deceau'de,

With winges to flye nighe Phœbus did presume.

At length in deede I plainly well perceau'de,

It was some king of vitall breath bereau'de,

From flight he fell presuming farre to hye:

Giue eare take heede and learne not so to flye. ed. 1575.

* "Mempricius the fyrst king of Brytons reigned X yere." *Polychronicon*

Now when as hee was gone, there presently, mee thought,
 A King full Angel like in feathers did appeare:
 With flying winges and plumes by cunning finely wrought,
 As hee aloft like fame to flie prepared were,
 To harken well his tale I gaue an heedy eare,
 Which hee in order thus mee thought did then contriue,
 Desiring mee to write it so, to warne the rest aliue.

HOW KING BLADUD,¹

taking on him to fly, fell vpon the

Temple of Apollo, and brake his

necke, The yeare before Christ,

844.

I

I PRAY thee *Higgins* take in hand thy pen

And write my life and fall, among'st the rest

¹ Bladud is represented as a prince eager in the pursuit of learning, and of unusual mental acquirements. Having travelled to Athens he had sufficient address to obtain a visit to his native land of four of the most eminent scholars, or philosophers; for whom he founded an University at Stamford with many liberal endowments, and which flourished until the time of St. Augustine, who got the same suppressed on a presumption of heresy among the scholars. He also reputedly discovered the medicinal virtues of the hot-baths at Bath, a circumstance alone sufficient in that remote age to add a fabulous portion in the emblazonment of his character, and a belief, as the Chronicle of St. Albans hath it, that "through his craft of nygromancy he made a meruaylous hote bathe, as the geste telleth." This same "geste" seems the foundation of the tale in all the Chronicles, which, though often repeated, was early disbelieved. It is best descanted on by the enlightened Trevisa in the Polychronicon. "Bladud, Leyles sone, a nygromancer was the ix kyng of Brytons, he buylded Bathe and called it Caerbadum. Englysshmen called it after Athamannes cyte, but atte last men called it Bathonia that is Bathe.—W[illelmus Marmel.] de pontificum. li. ii. In this cyte wellet vp and spryngeth hote bathes and men wene that Julius Cezar made there suche bathes.—R[anulphus of Chestre] But Ganfr. Monemutensis in his Brytons book sayth that Bladud made thylkes Bathes: by cause that William [of Malm.] had not seen that brytons book, wrote so, by telling of other men, or by his owne gheasing; as he wrote other thynges, not best aduisedly. Therfore it semeth more sothly that Bladud made not the hote bathes, ne Juluis Cezar dyde suche a deede, though Bladud buylded and made the cyte. But it acordeth better to kindly reason that the water renneth in the erthe by veynes of brymstone and sulphure and so is kendely made hote in that cours and spryngeth vp in dyuerse places of the cyte. And so there ben hote bathes that washeth of tetres, soores and skabbes.—Trevisa. Though men myght by crafte make hote bathes for to dure longe ynough this acordeth well to reason and phylosophye and treateth of hote welles and bathes that ben in dyuerse londes, though the water of this bathe be more troubylly, and heuyer of sauour and of smelle than other hote bathes ben

A warning set mee downe for curious men,
Whose wittes the worke of nature seeke to wrest :

that I haue seen at Akon in Almayne and at Egges in Sauoye, whiche ben as fayre and clere as ony colde welle streine. I haue ben bathed therin and assayed them."

Higgins, in his account of the learning of Bladud, has closely copied Bale, whose character was then generally known through the medium of Grafton's chronicle. Perhaps to form the measure on a general model this life was re-written, being first composed in quatrains. It stands thus in the first edition.

*Bladud recyteth how he practyzyng by curious artes to flye, fell and brake
his necke. The yeaere before Christe 344.*

SHALL I rehearse, likewyse my name?
And eke a place amongst them fill,
Which at their endes to mischief came?
Sith Morpheus bids me so, I will.

And that because I see thee minde,
To write my storie fate and fall,
Such curious heads it reade and finde:
May flee to flye, and shunne my thrall.

If daunger teach them liue take heede:
If leasers harme, make lookers wyse:
If warines do safetie breede,
Or wracke make saylers shelues dispise.
Then may my hurt giue sample sure:
My losse of life may lokers learne:
My warning may beware procure,
To such as daunger scarce discerne.

I am that Bladud Britaine king.
Rudhudebras his eldest sonne,
Did learning first to England bring:
And other wonders more were done.
Now giue me eare, and after wryte:
Marke well my life, example take:
Eschue the euill that I recite,
And of my death a myrour make.

In youth I gaue my minde to lore,
For I in learning tooke repaste:
No earthly pleasure likte me more,
I went to Athens at the last.

A towne in Greece, whose fame went foorth
Through all the world hir name was spred:
I counted knowledge so much woorth,
Hir only loue to Greece me led.

I was Prince *Bladud*, pregnant as the best
 Of wisdom, and of wealth, and learning I had store,
 Of regall race I came what neede I craued more?

There first of all the artes of seuen,
 Wherein before I had small skill:
 I Grammer gate declares the steuen,
 By rule to speake, and wryte at will.

Next after that in Rhetorike fine,
 Which teacheth how he talke to fyle:
 I gate some knowledge in short time,
 And coulde perswade within a whyle.

I thirdly learned Logicke well,
 An arte that teacheth to dispute:
 To aunswere wisely or refell,
 Distinguishe, proue, disproue, confute:

Then after that, of number, I
 The skilfull arte likewyse attainde:
 Wherin of Mathematickes lie,
 Full many pointes I after gainde.

And Musicke milde I lernde, that telles
 Tune, tyme, and measure of the song:
 A science swete the reste excelles,
 For melody hir notes among.

But sixtly I the dame of artes,
 Geometrie of great engine
 Employde, with all hir skilfull partes,
 Therby some greater giftes to winne.

So laste I lernde Astronomie,
 A lofty arte that paste them all:
 To knowe by motions of the skye,
 And fixed starres, what chaunce might fall.

This pleasaunt arte allured me,
 To many fonde inuentions then:
 For iudgements of Astrologie,
 Delites the mindes of wisest men.

So doth the arte Phisiognomie,
 Dependes on iudgment of the face:
 And that of Metoposcopie,
 Which of the forehead telles the grace.

And Chiromancie by the hande,
 Coniecures of the inward minde:
 Eke Geomancie by the lande,
 Doth diuers many farlies finde.

2.

But this in all the sortes of men wee see,
An vncontented minde when much they haue ;

Augurium eke was vsde of olde
By byrdes of future things presagde:
And many thinges therby they tolde,
Were skilfull, learned, wyse and agde.

But Magicke, for it seemid sweete,
And full of wonders made me muse:
For many feates I thought it meete,
And pleasaunt for a Prince to vse.

Three kindes there are for nature's skill,
The first they Naturall do name:
In which by herbes and stones they will,
Worke wonders thinges, are worthy fame.

The next is Mathematicall,
Where Magike workes by nature so:
That brasen heads make speake it shall,
Of woode birdes, bodies flye, and go.

The thirde Veneficall by right,
Is named for by it they make:
The shapes of bodies chaunge in sight,
And other formes on them to take.

What nede I tell what Theurgie is,
Or Necromancie you despise:
A diuelishe arte, the feendes by this
Seeme calde, and coniurde to arise.

Of these too much I learned then,
By those such secrete artes profest:
For of the wise and skilfull men,
Whome Fame had praisde I gate the best.

They promist for to teach me so,
The secretes of dame nature's skill:
That I nede neuer taste of woe,
But alwayes might forsee it still.

Wherefore enflamed with their loue,
I brought away the best I could:
From Greece to Britayne lande to proue,
What feates for me deuise they would.

Of which were foure Philosophers,
For passing skill excelde the rest:
Phisitions and Astronomers,
In Athens all they were the best.

The learned yet would more profounder bee,
 The richest most t'encease their wealth do craue;
 The finest Dames doe slike² their faces braue;

² Sleek. Jamieson.

My father harde of my retourne,
 Of my successe in learning there:
 And how the Grecians did adourne,
 My wittes with artes that worthy were.

He herde likewyse what store I brought,
 Of learned Greekes from Atticke soyle:
 And of my laboure learning sought,
 With study, trauayle, payne and toyle.

I likewyse heard he buylded here,
 Three townes while absent thence was I:
 By South he foundid Winchester,
 By East he built Cantorbury.

By West full highe he built the last,
 On hill from waters deepe belowe:
 Calde Shaftesbury on rockes full fast,
 It standes and giue to Seas a showe.

These causde we both might well reioyce
 He for because I gate such fame:
 And I, for that by all mennes voyce,
 His factes deseru'de immortall name.

What nedes much talke, the peres and all
 The commons eke with one assent:
 Extold my name especiall,
 Which had my youth in learning spent.

I was receau'de with triumphes great,
 With pageauntes in eache towne I past:
 And at the court my princely seate,
 Was by my fathers ioyned fast.

The nobles then desir'de to haue,
 On me their children wayte and tende:
 And royall giftes with them me gaue,
 As might their powres therto extende.

But here began my cause of care,
 As all delightes at length haue ende:
 Be mixte with woes our pleasures are,
 Amidste my ioyes, I lost a freinde.

The noblest yet would higher clime, and all to skies
Immortall they to make their names on earth deuise.³

³ The noble higher climes and to the skies
T'advance his name he daily doth deuise. N.

My father, nyne and twenty yeares,
This time had raignde and held the crowne:
As by your Chronicles appeares,
Whan fates, on vs began to frowne.

For euen amidst his most of ioye,
As youth, and strength and honours fade:
Sore sickenes did him long anoye,
At laste, of life an ende it made.

Then was I chose king of this lande,
And had the crowne as had the rest:
I bare the scepter in my hande,
And sworde that all our foes opprest.

Eke for because the Greekes did vse,
Me well in Grece at Athens late:
I bad those foure I brought to chuse:
A place that I might dedicate

To all the Muses and their artes,
To learnings vse for euermore:
Which when they sought in diuers partes,
At last they found a place therfore.

Amidst the realme it lies welnighe,
As they by art and skill did proue:
An healthfull place not lowe nor highe,
An holsome soyle for their behoue.

With water streames, and springs for welles:
And medowes sweete, and valeyes grene:
And woods, groaues, quarries, al thing else
For studentes weale, or pleasure bene.

When they reported this to me,
They prayde my grace that I would builde,
Them there an Vniuersitie,
The fruites of learning for to yelde.

I buylte the scholes, like Attikes then,
And gaue them landes to maintayne those:
Which were accounted learned men,
And could the groundes of artes disclose.

3.

In *Britayne* though I learned had full well
The artes, and could among'st the wise conferre,

The towne is called Stamford yet,
There stande the wailes vntill this daye :
Foundations eke of scholes I set,
Bide yet (not maintaine) in decaye.

Whereby the lande receauid store,
Of learned clarkes long after that :
But nowe giue eare I tell thee more,
And then my fall, and great mishap.

Because that time Apollo was,
Surmisde the God that gaue vs wit :
I builde his temple braue did passe,
At Troynouant the place is yet.

Some saye I made the batthes at Bathe :
And made therefore two tunnes of brasse :
And other twayne seuen saltes that haue
In them, but these be made of glasse

With sulphur filde, and other things,
Wylde fire, saltgem, salte peter eke :
Salte armoniake, salte Alchime,
Salte commune, and salte Arabecke.

Salte niter mixid with the rest,
In these fowre tunnes by portions right :
Fowre welles to laye them in were dreste,
Wherin they boyle both daye and night.

The water springes them round about,
Doth ryse for aye and boyleth stil :
The tunnes within and eke without,
Do all the welles with vapours fill.

So that the heate and clensing powre,
Of Sulphur and of salts and fyre :
Doth make the bathes eche pointed houre,
To helpe the sickly health desyre.

These bathes to soften sinewes haue
Great vertue and to scoure the skin :
From Morpew white and black to saue,
The bodics faint are bathde therein.

For lepry, scabs, and sores are olde,
For scurfes, and botch, and humors fall :
The bathes haue vertues manyfolde,
If God giue grace to cure them all.

Yet when of *Athens* I the fame heard tell,
(Though it in *Greece* so far hence distant were)
I trauayl'd thither, writers witnesse are

The ioyntes are swelde, and hardned milte:
And hardned liuer, palseis paine,
The poxe and itche, if worke thou wilt,
By helpe of God it heales againe.

Shall I renege I made them then?
Shall I denye my cunning founde?
By helpe I had of learned men,
Those worthy welles in gratefull grounde?

I will do so: for God gaue grace,
Whereby I knew what nature wrought:
And lent me lore to finde the place,
By wisdom where those wells I sought.

Which once confest lo here my harme,
Eschewe the like if thou be wyse:
Let neuer will thy wits becharme,
Or make the chaunge of kinde deuise.

For if the fishe would learne to goe,
And leaue to swim against his vre:
When he were quite the waters fro,
He could not swim you may be sure.

Or if the beast would learne to flie,
That had no plumes by nature lent:
And get him wynges as earst did I,
Would not thinke you it him repent?

Though Magike Mathematicall,
Make wooden birdes to flye and soare:
Eke brasen heads that speake they shall,
And promise many marueiles more.

Yet sith it swarues from Nature's will,
As much as these that I recite:
Refuse the fondnes of such skill,
Doth ay with death the proufe requite.

I deemde I could more soner frame,
My selfe to flye then birdes of wood:
And ment to get eternall fame,
Which I esteemde the greatest good.

I deckt my selfe with plumes and wynges,
As here thou seest in skilfull wise:
And many equall poysing thinges
To ayde my flight, to fall or rise.

I studied there, and thence of learned men I brought
That learning might from *Britayne* land no more so far bee sought.⁴

⁴ That noble arts in Britain might be taught. N.

Thou thinkste an arte that seldome vsde,
In hand I tooke, and so it was:
But we no daunger then refusde,
So we might bring our feates to passe.

By practise at the length I could,
Gainst store of wynde with ease arise:
And then which way to light I should,
And mount, and turne I did deuise.

Which learned but not perfectly,
Before I had therof the sleight:
I flew aloft but downe fell I,
For want of skill againe to light.

Upon the temple earst I built,
To God Apollo, downe I fell:
In fitters broisde for such a guilt,
A iust reuenge requited well.

For what should I presume so highe,
Against the course of nature quite
To take me wynges and saye to flye,
A foole no fowle in fethers dight.

As learning founds and cunning finds,
To such haue wit the same to vse:
So she confounds, and marres the minds,
Of those her secrets seeme t'abuse.

Well then deserts requirde my fall,
Presumption proude, depriu'de my breath:
Renowne bereft my life and all,
Desire of prayse, procurde my death:

Do let allureing arts alone,
They pleasaunt seeme yet are they vayne:
Amongst an hundreth scarce is one,
Doth ought thereby but labour gayne.

Their cunning castes are crafty cares,
Deuices vayne deuisde by men:
Such witched wiles are Sathans snares,
To traine in fooles, despise them then.

Their wisdome is but wily wit,
Their sagenes is but subtiltie:

4.

But after hee was dead that was my stay,
 My father graue, I meane the worthy King
 Then all the *Britaynes* shortly by a day
 To royall seat elected mee did bring.
 Where I to place in order euery thing,
 Did both receiue the crowne⁵ and scepter in my hand,
 With glory and renowned fame to gouerne all the land.⁶

5.

Then, for because the sway of all the Ile
 Depended on my gouvernement to rest
 I did consult with all the peeres a while,
 And of my father's counsaylers the best,
 I order tooke for matters vnredrest,
 Appoynting vnto each such place of iustice fit,
 As serued to their birth, their persons, wealth and wit.⁷

⁵ Receiu'd both crowne. N.

⁶ With right and equitie to rule this land. N.

⁷ Giuing to each such peace as best did fit

Their birth, their wealth, their persons and their wit. N.

Darke dreames deuisde for fooles are fit,
 And such as practise pampestry.

Thou seest my fall and eke the cause,
 Vnwisely I good giftes abusde:
 Lo here the hurt of learned lawes,
 If they be wrested or misusde.

Then wryte my story with the rest,
 May pleasure when it comes to vewe:
 Take heede of counsayles all is best,
 Beware, take heede farewell adieu.

Farewell, will students keepe in minde,
 οὐκ ἀγέλᾳ κακὰ ἔργα:
 Els may they chaunce like fate to finde,
 For why, Τοῖς κακοῖς τρεῖς κακὰ.

Τελος.

6.

The learned *Greekes*, whom I from *Athens* brought,
 Conferring with the *British* learned men :
 A place, as I commaunded them, had sought
 Amid'st the Realme, and brought mee word agen.
 At *Staneford* there I built a colledge then,
 And made prouision for the same perdy,
 To maynetayne them a famous Vniuersity.⁸

7.

By this, of skilfull men the land had store,
 And all the arts were read in *Britayne* well :
 No countrey was for learning praysed more.
 Abroad, the world began of vs tell.⁹
 From other nations hither came to dwell
 The wisest wits, commending vs, extolling vs to skies :
 They sayd wee were a people stout, and learned, graue, and wise.¹⁰

8.

And for that time of Gods wee honour'd all,
Apollo high for wisdom, arte, and skill :
 At *Troynouant* a Temple speciall
 I built to him, for sacrifices still.
 Whereon I fell, as after speake I will.
 Such was our vse and superstition [wholy]¹ then,
 To deeme as Gods the statutes tall of noble worthy men.²

9.

Some saye I made the holesome Baths at Bathe,³
 And made therefore two Tunnes of burning brasse :
 And other twayne seauen kindes of salts that haue

⁸ And of my land I gaue the fertil'st partes,
 To foster learning and the famous artes. N.

⁹ We did in noble science so excell. N.

¹⁰ ———commending vs to skies,
 Deeming vs people valiant, learn'd and wise. N.

¹ Niccols to improve the measure made several omissions in the text which are distinguished by inverted brackets.

² To deeme as Gods the images of men. N.

³ By arts I made. N.

In them inclos'd, but these bee made of glasse,
With sulphur fild, wilde fire emixt there was,
And in foure welles these Tunnes so placed heate for aye
The water springing vp, before it passe away. ⁴

10.

Which waters heate and clensing perfect powre,
With vapours of the sulphur, salts, and fire,
Hath vertue great, to heale, and washe, and scowre
The bathed sores therein that health desire.
If of the vertues, moe thou dost require
[To knowe,] I will resite what old experience tells
In causes cold the noble vertues of these welles.

11.

The bathes to soften sinewes vertue haue,
And also for to clense and scowre the skin
From Morphewes white and blacke, to heale and saue
The bodyes freckled, faynt, are bathed therein:
Scabs, lepry, sores are ⁵ old and festered in,
The scurfe, botch, itche, goute, poxe, [sweld ioynts] and humores fell,
The milt and liuer hard it heales, and palsey well. ⁶

12.

I must confesse by learned skill I found
Those natie welles whence springs that helpe ⁷ for men:
But well thou know'st there runnes from vnder ground
Springes sweete, salt, cold, and hote euen now as then,
From rocke, salt petre, alume, grauell, fen,
From sulphur, iron, leade, gold, siluer, brasse and tinne:
Ech fountayne takes the force of vayne it coucheth in. ⁸

13.

Then who so knowes by nature's worke in these,
Of metalles or of mynes the force to heale,

⁴ These Tunnes I did essay

To place by arte that they might last of aye. N.

⁵ Both. N.

⁶ Hard it healeth well. N.

⁷ Whence ye haue helpe. N.

⁸ Springs vertue take of vaines that they been in. N.

May sooner giue his iudgement in disease,
 For curing by the bath, and surer deale
 With sickly people of the publique weale,
 And also finde of fountaynes salt, or hote, or cold,
 And for to heale by them the sicke with honour bee bold,⁹

14.

The Citie eke of *Bathe* I founded there,
 Renowned far by reason of the welles :
 And many monuments that auncient were
 I placed there, thou know'st the story tells.
 I sought renowne and fame and nothing elze.
 But when our actes extoll our prayse aboue the skie,
 W'are blinded so, wee looke not downe from whence wee flye.¹⁰

15.

Tere are but fewe, whom Fortune bathes in blesse,
 But blinded are, and dazelingly they looke :
 They see nought else but worldly happinesse,
 At that they only fish with Fortune's hooke.
 Beneath on earth pompe, pelfe, and prayse they pooke,
 On that depending frayle, that fayles, and flits, and flyes,
 Forsaking vertue sole, that bides for aye aboue the skies.¹

16.

Mens vayne delightes are wondrous to behold,
 For that that reason nills, nor nature sowes
 They take in hand, on science far to bold,
 Deceiu'd by suttle snares of diuelish showes.
 From which attemptes a floud of mischief flowes,
 An heape of hurtes, [a swarme of smartes] a fry of foule decayes,
 A flocke offeares, [a droue of deathes,] and thrales a thousand wayes.

⁹ Fountaines hot and cold,
 To heale by them the sicke, both yong and old. N.

¹⁰ Extols vs to the skies,
 We looke not downe from whence we first did rise. N.
¹ Ambition will not wisdom's counsell brooke,
 Pride sets her thoughts on things that vade away,
 Forsaken vertue which doth nere decay. N.

17.

If that the water fish forsake the streame
 Agaynst his kinde, feeles hee no hurt ensues?
 Or if the brocke would learne to play the breame,
 And leaue the lambes at land, were this no newes?
 A fethered fowle in th'earth a den to chuse,
 Or flounder say to flye [and soare aloft] the larke to catch,
 Would not you maruell thē, what monsters now doth nature hatch?²

18.

But sith wee see that nature hath assign'd
 The fowle to fly the ayre, as seemeth well,
 The fish to swim the sea, as fits his kinde,
 The earth for men and beastes to breede and dwell:
 Of right a man, which doth the rest excell,
 Should euen so far surpasse the rest in ech degree,³
 As all the rest to him in wit and reason weaker bee.⁴

19.

All this I speake to warne the rest that heare,
 And eke to shew the blindnesse of delites.
 Herein my foly vayne may playne appeare,
 What hap they heape which try out cunning slightes,
 What hurt there hits, at such vayne shewes and sightes,
 Where men for pleasure only take much [toyle and] payne,
 To alter nature's gifts for [pompe, and pride, and] pleasure vayne.

20.

Were not it straunge, thinke you, a King to fly,
 To play the tumbler, or some iugling cast?
 To dresse him selfe in plumes, as erst did I,
 And vnder armes to knit on winges full fast?
 A sport you thinke that might the wise agaste.
 But *Magicke Mathematicall*⁵ had taught mee poynts of scill,
 Whereby when first I practis'd then, I lern'd my selfe to kill.⁶

² We might admire what monsters time did hatch. N.

³ Surpasse in his degree. N.

⁴ As all the rest in wisdom weaker. bee. N.

⁵ Magicke arte. N.

⁶ Which in the end did proue my future ill. N.

I deckte my corps with plumes (I say) and winges,
 And had them set, thou seest, in scilfull wise,
 With many feats, fine poyseing equall thinges,
 To ayde my selfe in flight to fall or rise,
 An arte men seldome vse mine enterprise:⁷

[Somewhat] gaynst store of winde, by practise rise I could,
 And try'd which way to turne, and mount, and lyght I should.⁸

22.

But er the perfect scill I learned had,
 (And yet mee thought I could doe passing well)
 My subiects' hearts with pleasaunt toyes to glad,
 From Temple's top, where did *Apollo* dwell,
 I 'sayd to flye, but on the Church I fell,
 And broysed all to peeces lost⁹ my life withall.
 This was my race, mine exercise and fatall fall.¹

23.

What vayner thing could any Prince deuise,
 Than so himselfe a foolish fowle to showe:
 Learne you by mee, that count your selues so wise,
 The worst to doubt of thinges, what ere you know,
 Fly not so high for feare you fall so lowe:

The massy wight is far to great for fethery downe to beare:

Below y^e happy man knowes when tis well, & can contēt hym there.³

24.

These curious artes alurementes haue alone,
 They profer much in recompence of payne:
 But yet among'st a thousand scarce is one
 In practise, ought by them can saue or gayne.
 You see perdy they are² but false and vayne

⁷ Few men did euer vse like enterprise. N.

⁸ And turne and winde at last which way I would. N.

⁹ And in the fall I lost. N. ¹ This was my race, this was my fatall fall. N.

² In their effects they are. N.

³ Be wise in artes exceed not wisdome's bound,
 The depth of arte by wit may not be found. N.

Sophisticall, deceitfull, [endlesse] and vntrue,
That nothing haue them selues, and promise all to you.⁴

25.

I speake not of the rest that are in vse
Amongst the wiser sort, Philosophy,
Nor of the partes thereof, but of th'abuse
That comes by magicke arts of imagery,
By vile inchauntments, charmes, and pampestry,
All which I deeme (and they shall finde in prooffe) as euill
That practise them, as is (by whom they deale) the diuell.⁵

26.

To make an end: you noble Kinges content
Your selues with studies seruing for the state:
You Lordes also with all your wits inuent
What way t'eschewe the Prynce and people's hate.
Yee subiects loue your Prynce, eschewe debate.

I wish you all beware to clime, or flee, or soare to hie,
For feare you tomble downe, or slip, or fall, as erst did I.⁶

⁴ That nothing haue yet promise all to you. N.
All which by nature are abhor'd as euill,
Practisde by fooles, inuented by the diuell. N.

⁶ ——— Beware of climbing high,
Lest that you helpelesse fall, as erst did I. N.

THE AUTHOUR.

When Bladud thus had ended quite his tale,
And tolde his life as you haue heard before:
He toke his flight, and then a Lady pale
Appeard in sight, beraide with bloudy gore:
In hande a knife of sanguine dye she bore:
And in her breste a wounde was pearced wyde,
So freshly bledde, as if but than she dyde.
She staide a while, her coulour came and went,
And doubtful was that would haue tolde hir paine:
In wofull sort she seemed to lament,
And could not wel her tongue from talke refraine.
For why her griefes vnfolde she would right faine,
Yet bashfull was: at length an ende to make,
Hir Morpheus wild, and then thus wyse she spake,

LENUOY.

1.

Who so that takes in hand the aire to scale,
 As *Bladud* here did take on him to flie:
 Or *Dedal's* sonne (as *Poets* tell the tale)
 Yong *Icarus*, that flew (they say) so hie:
 Or else as *Simon Magus* flew perdy:
 Though nere so well his plumes and winges hee decke,
 By sea h'is droun'd, by land hee breakes his necke.

2.

On ground is surest place for men to goe,
 But yet take heede and let your ground bee good:
 The surest footing is perdy beloe,
 Who styes the aire I count his dealing wood:
 The slender buildings hauty, feoble stoode,
 On high the tempests haue much powre to wrecke:
 Then best to bide beneath, and surest for the necke.

3.

King *Bladud* yet might here commended bee,
 For that hee loued learning all his daies:
 Eke for hee built an Vniuersity
 At *Staneford* first, hee well deserued praise,
 But now his nice *Cordila* here assaies,
 From bleeding breast, to tell her woefull wrecke,
 With knife in hand her desperate death to decke.

HOW QUEENE COR-

dila in dispaire slew her selfe, The

yeare before Christ,

800.

1.

If any woefull wight haue cause to wayle her woe,
Or griefs are past do pricke vs Princes tell our fall :
My selfe likewise must needes constrayned eke doe so,
And shew my like misfortunes and mishaps withall.
Should I keepe close my heauy haps and thrall,
Then did I wrong : I wrong'd my selfe and thee,
Which of my facts a witnes true maist bee.

2.

A woman yet must blush when bashfull is the case,
Though trueth bid tell the tale and story as it fell :
But sith that I mislike not audience, time, nor place,
Therefore I cannot keepe my woes in counsaile¹ well.
No greater ease of heart then griefes to tell,
It vaunteth all the dolours of our minde,
Our carefull hearts thereby great comfort finde.

3.

For why to tell that may recounted bee agayne,
And tell it as our cares may compasse ease :
That is the salue and medicine of our payne,
Which cureth corsies all and sores of our disease :
It doth our pinching panges and paynes apease :
It pleads the part of an assured friend,
And tells the trade, like vices to amend.

4.

Therefore if I more willing bee to tell my fall,
With my mishaps² to ease my burdened breast and minde :

¹ Cannot still keepe in my counsaile. ed. 1575.

² And shew mishaps. ib.

Some³ others haply may auoide and shunne the thrall,
 And thereby for distresse more aide and comfort finde.
 They keeping⁴ measure, whereas I declin'd,
 May bee as prompt to flie⁵ like brute and blame
 As I to tell, or thou to write the same.

5.

Wherefore if thou wilt afterwards record⁶
 What Queene *Cordila* tells⁷ to ease her inward smarte,
 I will recite my story tragicall ech word,
 To thee that geu'st an eare, and ready art.⁸
 But lest I set the horse behinde the cart,
 I minde to tell ech thing in order, so,
 As thou maist see and shew whence sprang my woe.

6.

My grandsire *Bladud* hight, that found the bathes by skill,
 A fethered King that practis'd highe to soare⁹
 Whereby hee felt the fall, God wot against his will,
 And neuer went, road, raygnd, nor spake, nor flew no more.
 After whose death my father¹ *Leire* therefore
 Was chosen King, by right apparent heyre,
 Which after built the towne of *Leircestere*.

7.

Hee had three daughters, first and eld'st hight *Gonerell*,²
 Next after her his yonger *Ragan*³ was begot :
 The third and last was I the yongest, nam'd *Cordell*.
 Vs all our father *Leire* did loue to well, God wot.⁴
 But⁵ minding her that lou'd him best to note,

³ That. ed. 1575.⁴ May keep. ib.⁵ And willing be to flye. ib.⁶ For sith I see thee prest to heare that wilt recorde. ib.⁷ What I Cordila tell. ib.⁸ To thee that giu'st an eare to heare and ready art. ib.⁹ Practisde for to flye and soare. ib.¹ Who dead his sonne my father. ib.² He had three daughters faire the first hight Gonerell. N.³ My sister Ragan. ed. 1575.⁴ And of vs all our father deire in age did dote. ib.⁵ So. ib.

Because hee had no sonne t'enioy his land,
Hee thought to guerdon most where⁶ fauour most hee fand.

8.

What though I yongest were, yet men mee iudg'd more wise
Then either *Gonerell*, or *Ragan* more of age:⁷
And fairer farre: wherefore my sisters did despise
My grace and giefts, and sought my wrecke to wage.⁸
But yet though vice on⁹ vertue dye with rage,
It can not keepe her vnderneath to drowne:
For still¹ shee flittes aboue, and reaps renowne.²

9.

My father thought to wed vs vnto Princely peeres,³
And vnto them and theirs deuide and part the land.
For both my sisters first hee cal'd⁴ (as first their yeares
Requir'd) their mindes, and loue, and fauoure t'vnderstand.
(Quoth hee) all doubts of duty to aband,
I must assay your frendly faithes to proue:
My daughters, tell mee how you doe mee loue.⁵

10.

Which when they aunswerd him they lou'd their father more⁶
Then they themselues did loue, or any worldly wight:
He praised them, and sayd hee would therefore⁷
The louing kindnes they deseru'd in fine requite.

⁶ To giue where. ed. 1575.

⁷ Had more age. ib.

⁸ My prayse t'asswage. ib.

⁹ Gainst. ib.

¹ But still. ib.

² This stanza follows in the edit. 1575.

Yet nathelesse my father did me not mislike,
But age so simple is and easy to subdue,
As childhode weake thats voide of wit and reason quite;
They thinke thers nought you flatter fainde, but all is true,
Once old and twyse a childe tis said with you,
Which I affirme by prooffe that was definde,
In age my father had a childishe minde.

³ He thought to wed vs vnto nobles three, or peres. ib.

⁴ Sent. ib.

⁵ I must assaye and eke your friendships proue.

Now tell me eche how much you do me loue. ib.

⁶ Lou'de him well and more. ib. ⁷ Would agayne therefore. ib.

So found my sisters fauour in his sight,
 By flattery faire they won their father's heart,
 Which after turned hym and mee to smart.

11.⁸

But not content with this, hee asked mee likewise
 If I did not him loue and honour well.
 No cause (quoth I) there is I should your grace despise :
 For nature so doth binde and duty mee compell,
 To loue you, as I ought my father, well.
 Yet shortely I may chaunce, if Fortune will,
 To finde in heart to beare another more good will.

12.

Thus much I sayd of nuptiall loues' that ment,
 Not minding once of hatred vile or ire :
 And partly taxing them, for which intent
 They set my fathers heart on wrathfull fire.
 " Shee neuer shall to any part aspire
 Of this my realme (quoth hee) among'st you twayne :
 But shall without all dowry aie remaine."

13.

Then to *Maglaurus* Prince, with *Albany* hee gaue
 My sister *Gonerell*, the eldest of vs all :

⁸ But not content with this he minded me to proue,
 For why he wonted was to loue me wonders wel :
 How much dost thou (quoth he) Cordile thy father loue
 I wil (sayd I) at once my loue declare and tell :
 I lou'de you euer as my father well,
 No otherwyse, if more to know you craue :
 We loue you chiefly for the goodes you haue.

Thus much I said, the more their flattery to detect
 But he me aunswered therunto again with ire,
 Because thou dost thy fathers aged yeare neglect,
 That lou'de the more of late then thy deserts require,
 Thou neuer shalt, to any part aspire
 Of this my realme, emong thy sisters twayne,
 But euer shalt vndotid ay remayne.

Then to the king of Albany for wife he gaue
 My sister *Gonerell*, the eldest of vs all :

And eke my sister *Ragan* to *Hinniue* to haue,
And for her dowry *Camber* and *Cornwall*.

These after him should haue his Kingdome all.

Betweene them both hee gaue it franke and free,
But nought at all hee gaue of dowry mee.

14.

At last it chaunst a Prince of *Fraunce* to heare my fame.

My beauty braue, my wit was blaz'd abroad ech where.

My noble vertues prais'd mee to my father's blame,

Who did for flattery mee lesse friendly fauour beare.¹

Which when this worthy Prince (I say) did heare,

Hee sent ambassage lik'd mee more then life,

And soone obtayned mee to bee his wife.

15.

Prince *Aganippus* reau'd mee of my woe,

And that for vertues sake, of dowryes all the best :

So I contented was to *Fraunce* my father fro

For to depart, and hoapt t'enioy some greater rest.

¹ Who for I could not flatter did lesse fauour beare. N.

And eke my sister *Ragan* for *Hinnine* to haue,
Which then was Prince of *Camber* and *Cornwall*:
These after him should haue his kingdome all
Betwene them both, he gaue it franke and free:
But nought at all he gaue of dowry mee.

At last it chaunst the king of *Fraunce* to here my fame.
My beuty braue was blazed al abroad eche where:
And eke my vertues praisde me to my fathers blame
Did for my sisters flattery me lesse fauour beare
Which when this worthy king my wrongs did heare,
He sent ambassage likte me more then life,
T'intreate he might me haue to be his wife.

My father was content with all his harte, and sayde,
He gladly should obtaine his whole request at will
Concerning me, if nothing I herin denyde:
But yet he kept by their intisment hatred still,

Where liuing well belou'd, my ioyes encreast:
 I gate more fauour in that Prince his sight,
 Then euer Princesse of a Princely wight.

16.

But while that I these ioyes so well enioy'd in *Fraunce*,
 My father *Leire* in *Britayne* waxt vnweldy old.
 Whereon his daughters more themselues aloft t'aduaunce
 Desir'd the Realme to rule it as they wolde.
 Their former loue and friendship waxed cold,
 Their husbands rebels voyde of reason quite
 Rose vp, rebeld, bereft his crowne and right:

17.

Caus'd him agree they might in parts equall²
 Deuide the Realme, and promist him a gard

² Betwixt their husbands twaine they causde him to agree. N.

(Quoth he) your prince his pleasure to fulfill,
 I graunt and giue my daughter as you craue:
 But nought of me for dowry can she haue.

King Aganippus well a greed to take me so,
 Hee deemde that vertue was of dowries all the best
 And I contented was to *Fraunce* my father fro
 For to depart, and hoapte t'enioye some greater rest.
 I married was, and then my ioyes encreaste,
 A gate more fauoure in this Prince his sight,
 Then euer Princesse of a princely wight.

But while that I these ioyes enioyd at home in *Fraunce*,
 My father *Leire* in *Britayne* waxed aged olde,
 My sisters yet them selues the more aloft t'aduaunce,
 Thought well they might, be by his leaue, or sans so bolde:
 To take the realme and rule it as they wolde.

They rose as rebels voyde of reason quite,
 And they depriu'de him of his crowne and right.

Then they agreed, it should be into partes equall
 Deuided: and my father threscore knightes and squires

Of sixty Knights on him attending still at call.³

But in six monthes such was his hap to hard,

That *Gonerell* of his retinue barde

The halfe of them, shee and her husband reft :

And scarce alow'd the other halfe they left.

18.

Eke as in *Albany* lay hee lamenting fates,⁴

When as my sister so sought all his vtter spoyle :

The meaner vpstart courtiers thought themselues his mates,

His daughter him disdayn'd and forced not his foyle.

Then was hee fayne for succoure his to toyle

With halfe his trayne to *Cornwall*, there to lie

In greatest neede, his *Ragan's* loue to try.

19.

So when hee came to *Cornwall*, shee with ioy

Receiued him, and Prince *Maglaurus* did the like.

There hee abode a yeare, and liu'd without anoy :

But then they tooke all his retinue from him quite

³ Of sixtie Knights that on him should attendant bee. N.

⁴ As thus in his distresse he lay lamenting fates. N.

Should alwayes haue, attending on him still at call.

But in sixe monthes so much encreasid 'hateful Ires,

That *Gonerell* denyde all his desires,

So halfe his garde she and her husband refte :

And scarce alowde the other halfe they lefte.

Eke as in Scotlande thus he lay lamenting fates,

When as his daughter so sought all his vtter spoyle,

The meaner vpstart gentles, thought them selues his mates

And betters eke, see here an aged Prince his foyle,

Then was he fayne for succoure his, to toyle,

With all his knightes, to *Cornwall* there to lye:

In greatest nede his *Ragan's* loue to trie.

And when he came to *Cornwall*, *Ragan* then with ioye,

Receiu'd him and eke hir husband did the like :

There he abode a yeare and liu'de without anoy,

But then they tooke, all his retinue from him quite

K

Saue only ten, and shew'd him daily spite :
Which hee bewayl'd complayning durst not striue,
Though in disdayne they last alow'd but fieve.

20.

What more despite could deuclish beasts deuise,
Then ioy their fathers woefull days to see ?
What vipers vile could so their King despise,
Or so vnkinde, so curst, so cruell bee ?
From thence agayn hee went to *Albany*,
Where they bereau'd his seruaunts all, saue one,
Bad him content him selfe with that, or none.

21.

Eke at what time hee ask'd of them to haue his gard,
To gard his noble grace where so hee went :
They cal'd him doting foole, all his requests debard,
Demaunding if with life hee were not well content :
Then hee to late his rigour did repent
Gaynst mee, my sisters' fawning loue that knew,
Found flattery false, that seem'd so faire in vew.

Saue only ten, and shewde him dayly spite,
Which he bewailde complaining durst not striue,
Though in disdayne they last alowde but fieve.

On this he deemde him selfe was far that time vnwyse,
When from his daughter Gonerell to Ragan hee
Departed erste yet eache did him poore king despise:
Wherfore to Scotlande once againe with hir to bee,
And bide he went : but beastly cruell, shee
Bereau'de him of his seruauntes all saue one,
Bad him content him selfe with that or none.

Eke at what time he askte of eache to haue his garde,
To garde his grace where so he walkte or wente :
They calde him doting foole and all his hestes debarde,
Demaunded if with life he could not be contente.
Then he to late his rigour did repente
Gainst me, and sayde, Cordila nowe adieu :
I finde the wordes thou toldste mee to to true.

22.

To make it short, to *Fraunce* hee came at last to mee,
And told mee how my sisters euell^s their father vsde.
Then humbly I besought my noble King so free,
That he would aide my father thus by his abusde:
Who nought at all my humble hest refusde,
But sent to euery coast of *Fraunce* for aide,
Whereby King *Leire* might home bee well conueyde.

23.

The souldiours gathered from ech quarter of the land
Come at the length to know the noble Prince's will:
Who did commit them vnto captaynes euery band,
And I likewise of loue and reuerent meere good will
Desir'd my Lord, hee would not take it ill,
If I departed for a space withall,
To take a part, or ease my father's thrall.

24.

Hee graunted my request: Thence wee ariued here,
And of our *Britaynes* came to aide likewise his right

^s Ill. N.

And to be short, to *Fraunce* he came alone to mee,
And tolde me how my sisters him our father vsde:
Then I besought my king with teares vpon my knee,
That he would aide my father thus by them misusde,
Who nought at all my humble heste refusde:
But sent to euery coaste of *Fraunce* for ayde,
Wherwith my father home might be conueide.

The soldiours gathered from eche quarter of the land,
Came at the length to know the king his mind and wil:
Who did commit them to my father's aged hand,
And I likewise of loue and reuerent mere goodwill
Desirde my king, he would not take it ill,
If I departed for a space withall:
To take a parte, or ease my father's thrall.

This had: I partid with my father from my fere,
We came to *Britayne* with our royal campe to fight:

Full many subiects, good and stout that were :
 By martiall feats, and force, by subiects sword and might,
 The *British* Kings were fayne to yeeld our right :
 Which wonne, my father well this Realme did guide
 Three yeares in peace, and after that hee dyde.

25.

Then I was crowned Queene this Realme to hold,⁶
 Till fiae yeares past I did this Island guyde :
 I had the *Britaynes* at what becke I would,⁷
 Till that my louing King mine *Aganippus* dide :
 But then my seat it faltered on ech side,
 My sisters sonnes⁸ began with mee to iarre :
 And for my crowne wagde with mee mortall warre.⁹

26.

The one hight *Morgan* Prince¹ of *Albany*,
 And *Conidagus* King of *Cornwall* and of *Wales* :

⁶ And I was Queene the kingdome after stil to holde. ed. 1575.

⁷ Becke and bay I wolde. ib.

⁸ Two churlishe impes. ib.

⁹ This stanza follows in edir. 1575.

The one hight *Morgan* th' elder sonne of *Gonnerell*,
 My sister, and that other *Conidagus* hight.
 My sister *Ragan's* sonne, that lou'de me neuer well,
 Both nephewes mine yet would against mee *Cordell* fight,
 Because I lou'de always that semed right ;
 Therefore they hated mee and did pursue
 Their aunte and Queene as she had bene a jew.

¹ This *Morgane* was that time the Prince. ib.

And manly fought so long our enmies vanquisht were
 By martiall feates, and force by subiects sword and might.
 The Brityshe kinges were faine to yelde our right :
 And so my father well this realme did guide,
 Three yeares in peace and after that he dide.

Then I at *Leircester* in *Ianus* temple, made
 His tombe, and buried there his kingly regall corse,
 As sondry tymes in life before he often bade :
 For of our father's will we then did greatly force,
 We had of conscience eke so much remorse,
 That we supposde those childrens liues to ill :
 Which brake their father's testament, and will.

Both which at once prouided their artillery,
To worke mee woefull woe, and mine adherents bales.
What neede I fill thine eares with longer tales?
They did preuaile by might and powre, so fast
That I was taken prisoner at last.

27.

In spitefull sorte they vsed then my captiue corse:
No favour shewde to mee, extinct was mine estate:
Of kinred, Prynces, bloud, or peere was no remorse,
But as an abiect vile, and worse, they did mee hate.
To lie in darkesome dungeon was my fate,
As t'were a thiefe, mine aunsweres to abide,
Gaynst right and justice, vnder Jailour's guide.

28.

For liberty at length I su'd to subiects were:
But they kept mee in prison close, deuoid of trust:
If I might once escape, they were in dread and feare
Their fawning friends with mee would proue vntrue and iust.
They told mee take it patiently I must,
And bee contented that I had my life:
Sith with their mother's I began the strife.

29.

Whereby I sawe might nothing mee preuaile to pray,
To pleade, or proue, defend, excuse, or pardon craue:
They heard mee not, despis'd my plaints, sought my decay,
I might no lawe, nor loue, nor right, nor justice haue.
No friends, no faith, nor pittie could mee saue:
But I was from all hope of freedome² bard,
Condem'd, my cause like neuer to bee heard.

30.

Was euer noble Queene so drencht in wrecks of woe,³
Depos'd⁴ from Princely powre, bereft of liberty,

² Licence. ed. 1575.

³ Was euer lady in such wofull wreckfull wo. ib.

⁴ Depriu'de. ib.

Depriu'd of all these worldly pompes her pleasures fro,
 And brought from wealth to neede, distresse, and misery,
 From Pallace proude in prison poore to lie,
 From Kingdomes twayne, to dungeon one, no more,
 From Ladies wayting, vnto vermine store?

31.

From light to darke, from holesome aire to lothsom smell,
 From odoure sweete to smart, from ease to greecuous paine,
 From sight of Princely Wights, to place where theues doe dwell,
 From dainty beds of downe, to bed of strawe full fayne:
 From bowres of heauenly hewe, to dennes of daine:
 From greatest haps that worldly wights atchiue,
 To more distresse then any wretch aliue?

32.

When first I left my friends in *Fraunce* did me exalte,⁵
 And eke my noble King, mine *Aganippus* true:
 And came to *England*, for their heynous facts and faulte,
 Which from his right and kingdome quite our father threwe,
 To take his⁶ Realme: to raigne and treason knewe,
 I thinke of all misfortunes was the worst:
 Or else I deeme the causers all accurst.

33.

For marke my haplesse fall that fortune did me send,⁷
 As thus in prison⁸ vile on liue⁹ I lingring lay,
 When I had mourned long, but found no faythfull frend
 That could me helpe, or ayde, or comfort any way,
 Was seru'd at meate as those that¹ Kinges betray
 With fare God wote was simple, bare, and thin,
 Could not sustayne the corps it entred in.

⁵ When first I left, the crowne of France did me exhalt. ed. 1575.
 When friends I left in France that did me first exhalt. N.

⁶ This. ed. 1575.

⁷ That drawes at length to ende. ib.

⁸ As in this pryson. ib.

⁹ Vile aliue. N. ¹ Their. ed. 1575.

34.

And when the sighes, and teares, and playntes nigh burst my hart,
And place, and stench, and fare nigh poysond euery pore:
For lacke of frends to tell my seas of giltlesse smart,
And that mine eyes had sworne to take sweete sleepe no more,
I was content, sith cares oppresse me sore,
To leaue my foode, take mourning, playnts, and crye,
And lay mee downe, let grieve and nature trye.

35.

Thus as I pining lay, my carcas coucht on strawe,²
And felt the payne erst neuer creature earthly knewe,
Mee thought by night a grizely ghost in darkes I sawe,
Eke nearer still to mee with stealing steps shee drewe:
Shee was of colour pale and deadly³ hewe,
Her clothes resembled thousand kinds of thrall,
And pictures plaine of hastened deathes withall.

36.

I musing lay in paines, and wondred what shee was,
Mine eyes stood still, mine haire rose vp for feare an end,
My flesh it shoke and trembled: yet I cryde (alas)
What wight art thou, a foe or else what fawning frend?
If death thou art, I pray thee make an end.
But th'art not death. Art thou some fury sent,
My woefull corps, with paynes, to more torment?

37.

With that shee spake: "I am (quoth shee) thy frend *Despayre*,
Which in distresse each worldly wight with speede do ayde:
I rid them from their foes, if I to them repayre.
To long from thee by other caytiues was I stayde.
Now, if thou art to dye no whit afrayde,
Here shalt thou choose of Instruments (beholde)
Shall rid thy restlesse life, of this be bolde."

² Carcas on couch of straw. ed. 1575.

³ A deadly. ib.

38.

And therewithall shee threwe her garments lap aside,
Vnder the which a thousand thinges I sawe with eyes :
Both kniues, sharpe swordes, poynadoes⁴ all bedyde
With bloud, and poysons prest which shee could well deuise.

“ There is no hope (quoth shee) for thee to rise,
And get thy Crowne or Kyngdome refte agyne :⁵
But for to liue long lasting pynning payne.

39.

“ Lo here (quoth shee) the blade that *Did*’ of *Carthage* hight,
Whereby shee was from thousand panges of payne let passe :
With this shee slewe her selfe, after *Æneas*’ flight,
When hee to Sea from *Tyrian* shoares departed was.
Doe choose of these thou seest from woes to passe,
Or bide the end, prolong thy paynfull dayes,
And I am pleasde from thee to packe⁶ my wayes.”

40.

With that was I (poore wretche) content to take the knife,
But doubtfull yet to dye, and fearefull fayne would byde.
So still I lay in study with my selfe at bate and strife,
What thing were best of both these deepe extreames vntryde,
*Good Hope*⁷ all reasons of *Despayre* denyde :
And shee agayne replyde, to proue it best
To dye, for still in life my woes increast.

41.

Shee cal’d to minde the ioyes in *Fraunce* I whilome had :
Shee told me what a troupe of Ladyes was my trayne :
And how the Lordes of *Fraunce*, and *Britaynes*, both were glad
Of late to wayte on mee, and subiects all were fayne :
She tolde I had bin Queene of Kingdomes twayne,
And how my kinsmen⁸ had my seate and Crowne.
I could not rise, for euer fallen downe.

⁴ i. e. poniards.⁵ Or libertie agayne. ed. 1575.⁶ Get. ib.⁷ My Hope. ib.⁸ Nephewes. ib.

42.

A thousand thinges beside recited then *Despayre* :
 Shee tolde the woes in warres, that I had heapt of late,
 Rehearst the prison vile in steede of Pallace fayre,
 My lodging lowe and mouldy meates my mouth did hate ;
 Shee shewde mee all the dongeon where I sate,
 The dankish walles, the darkes, and bade mee smell,
 And byde the sauour if I likt it well.

43.

Whereby I wretch deuoyd of comfort quite and hope,
 And pleasures past comparde with present paynes I had,
 For fatall knife slipt forth, my fearefull hand did grope :
Despayre in this to ayde my senceles limmes was glad,
 And gaue the blade : to end my woes she bad.
 “ I will (quoth I) but first with all my hart
 Ile pray to Gods, reuenge my woefull smart.

44.

“ If any wrong deserue the wrecke, I pray yon skyes,
 And starres of light, (if you my plight⁹ doe rue)
 O *Phœbus* cleere, I thee beseech and pray likewise,
 Beare witnes of my playnts well knowne to Gods are true.
 You see from whence these iniuryes they grue.
 Then let like vengeaunce hap and light on those,
 Which vnderued were my mortall¹ foes.

45.

“ God graunt immortall² strife betweene them both may fall,
 That th’ one³ the other may, without remorse, distroye :
 That *Conidagus* may his cosin *Morgan* thrall,
 Because hee first decreast my wealth, bereft my ioye.
 I pray you Gods he neuer be a *Roy* :

⁹ My woefull plight. ed. 1575.

¹ Deadly. ib.

² A mortal. ib.

³ That one. ib.

But caytife may be payde with such a frend,
As shortly may him bring to sodayne end.

46.

“ Farewell my Realme of *Fraunce*, farewell, *Adieu*,
Adieu mes nobles tous, and *England* now farewell :
Farewell Madames my Ladyes, *car ie suis perdu*,
Il me fault aler desespoir m'adonne conseil
De me tuer, no more your Queene farewell.

My cousens⁴ mee oppresse with mayne and might,
A captiue poore, gaynst Justice all and right.”

47.

And therewithall the sight did fayle my dazeling eyne,
I nothing sawe saue sole *Dispaire* bad mee dispatch :
Whome I behelde : shee caught the knife from mee I weene,
And by hir elbowe carian death for me did watch.

“ Com on (quod I) thou hast a goodly catch.”

And therewithall *Dispaire* the stroke did strike,
Whereby I dyde, a damned creature like :

48.

Which I to late bewayle, let those a liue beware ;⁵
Let not the losse of goods or honours them constrayne
To playe the fooles, and take such carefull carke and care ;
Or to dispayre for any prison, pine, and payne ;
If they be gittlesse let them so remayne ;
Farre greater follye is it for to kill,
Themselues dispayring, then is any ill.

49.

Sith first thereby theyr enmyes haue that they desire,
By which they proue to deadly foes vnwares a frende :
And next they cannot liue, to former blisse t'spyre,

⁴ Nephewes. ed. 1575.

⁵ Which I, alas, lament, bid those alieue beware. ib.

If God do bring theyr foes in time to sodayne ende.
 They lastly, as the damned wretches, sende
 Theyr soules thereby to darkesome *Stygian* lake,
 Which kill the corps that mighty *Ioue* did make.⁶

LENUOY.

1.

When as this desperate Queene had ended thus
 Her tale, and tolde the haplesse grace she had :
 As of her playnte som poyntes I did discusse,
 Her sisters dealings were (mee thought) to bad.
 Her cosens cruell both, for Kingdomes mad.
 Her owne estate most pityfull to see,
 A Queene by kinred captiue kepte to bee.

⁶ Their soules to hell, when as they vndertake
 To kill a corps, which God did liuely make.

THE AUTHOR.

Now when this desperate Queene had ended thus
 Hir tale, and told what haplesse grace she had :
 As of hir talke some pointes I did discusse,
 In slomber faln I waxed wondrous sad,
 Hir nephewes dealings were me thought to bad:
 Which greu'de me much, but Morpheus bad let bee,
 And therewithall presented one to mee.

Of stature tall a worthy princely wight,
 In countenaunce he seemde yet mourning still;
 His complet harnesse not so braue in sight,
 Nor sure as ours, made now adayes by skill:
 But clampt together, ioynts but ioyned ill:
 Vnfit, vnhandsome, heauy, hounge, and plaine,
 Vnweldy wearing, ratling like a chaine.

Wherthrough he had receu'de a deadly stroake,
 By sworde, or other instrument of warre,
 And downe his thighes the bloud by sithes did soake
 Which I perceiued as he came a farre.
 Now sith (quoth he) to heare you present are :
 I will declare my name, life, factes and fall,
 And therewith thus he gan to tell it all. ed. 1575.

2.

So wise a Queene, so fayre a Princesse wrongde,
 So dutifull in parents plight of yore :
 By rebells vile hir cousens to bee throngde,
 Such hatred hir ambiciously that bore.
 Who euer saw such cruelty before?
Cordilaes state most pitifull to see,
 By kinred cloce in prison kepte to bee.⁷

⁷ The tale of the gentle Cordelia and her unfortunate and too credulous father is better known from the pages of Shakespeare than those of History. Though in both, if not entirely sprung from, it is enlarged by fable, yet the interest that has been excited by the drama justifies the giving it here from manuscript, in one of its earliest shapes, which as such forms a valuable record.

Of King Leir and of the answere of his yongest doughter that graciously was mariede to the kyng of Fraunce.

After kyng Bladud regned Leir his sone: and this Leir made the toune of Leicestre and lete calle the toune after his name and he gouernede the londe welle and nobly. This kyng Leir had iij doughters the first hight Gonorill, the secund Rigan and the third Cordeill, and the yongest doughter was fairest and best of condicions. The kynge hire fader, become an olde man, and wolde that his doughtres had been maried or that he deide: but first he thought to assaie whiche of ham [them] loued him best and moste, for she that loued him best shuld beste be maried. And he asked of the first doughter how moche sheo [she] him louede? and she answerd and saide, better than hier oune life. Now certes quoth the fader that is a grete loue. Tho [then] axede he of the secunde doughter, hou moche sheo him louede? and sheo said more and passing alle creatures of the world. Ma foy, quath the fader, more may I nought axen. And tho axed he of the thirde doughter, hou moche sheo him louede? Certes fader quoth she, my sustres haue tolde you glosyng wordes, but for suth I shalle telle you treuthe, for I loue you as moche as I owe to loue my fadere, and for to bryng you more in certeyn howe love goth, I shalle you telle, for as moche as ye be worthe so muche shal ye be louede. The kyng hire fader hadde wente sheo hadde hym scorned and become wonder wrothe and swore be heuen and erthe that she shuld neuer haue good of him: but his doughtres that loued him so moche shuld be welle auaunced and maried. And the first doughter he maried to Mangles kyng of Scotlande and the secunde he maried to Hauemos Erle of Cornewaille and so they ordeynede and speken betwene ham [them] that they shulde departe the reame betwene ham too after the dethe of Leir hire [their] fader. So that Cordeill his yongest doughter shulde no thing haue of his lande. But this Cordeill was wonderous faire and of so good condicions and maners that the kyng of Fraunce Agampe, herde of hire speke and sent to Leir, hire fader, for to haue hire vnto wife and prayed him therof. And kyng Leir hire fader sente him worde that he had departed his londe vnto his two other doughters and saide he hadde no more lande wherewith hire for to marien: And whenne Agampe herde this answere he sente anone ayeyn to Leir and said, that he axid no thyng

3.

But next from *Wales* in warlike armoure came
With wounded corps *Morganus* th' *Albane* king,
In woefull wise his doubtfull tale to frame.

with hire, but onliche hire clothyng and hire bodie. And anone king *Leir* hire fader sente hire ouer the see to the kyng of *Fraunce* and he receyuede hire with mochel worshipp, and with moche solempnite hire spoused and made hire quene of *France*.

How Kyng Leir was driven oute of his londe thurz his foly and how Cordil his yongest doughter helped him at his nede.

Thus hit felle afterwarde that tho two eldest doughtres wolde nought abide til that *Leir* hire fader were dede but werred vppon him whiles that he leued and moche sorwe and shame him dede. Wherefore thei benomen him holly the reame and betwene ham had ordeyned that one of ham shulde haue kyng *Leir* to sojourne all his life tyme with xl [lx] knyghtes and hire squiers, that he myght worshipfully gone and ride whider that he wolde into what contre that him likede to playn and to solacen. So that *Managles* kyng of *Scotland* had kyng *Leir* with him in the maner as is aboue seide and or other halfe yere were passide *Corneill* [sic] his eldest doughter that was quene of *Scotland* was so anoyed of him and of his peple that anone he and hire lorde speken togedres. Wherefore his knyghtes and his squyers half frame him were gone and no mo lefte but oneliche xxx. And whenne this was done *Leir* began for to make moche sorowe, for incheson that his astate was inpeired, and men had of him more scorne and despite thanne euere thei hadde beforne. Wherefore he wiste neuer what to done and atte the laste thought that he wolde wende into *Cornewaile* to *Ragan* his other doughter. And whenne he was come there, the *Erle* and his wife that was *Leir*'s doughter, him welcomede and with him made muche ioy, and there he dwelled with xxx knyghtes and squyers. And he had dwellede there scarsly tuelf month that his doughter of him nas fulle and of his companye, and hire lorde and shee of him had scorne and despite so that fro xxx knyghtes thei brougten vnto ten and afterwarde five and so there lefte with him no mo. Tho made he sorwe enough and said, sore wepyng: alas that euere he come into that lande. And seid yit had me better for to haue dwellede with my ferst doughter. And anone wente thennes a yein to his first doughter: but anone as she sawe him come, she swore be God and his holy names, and be as moche as she myght that he shulde haue no mo with him but on knyght if he wolde there abide. Tho began *Leir* wepe and made moche sorwe and said, tho alas nou to longe haue I leuede that this sorwe and mischefe is to me nowe falle: for now am I pouer that somtyme was riche but nou haue I no frende ne kyn that me wolle done eny goode. But whenne that I was riche alle men me honoured and worsheped and now euery man hath of me scorne and despite: And now I wote that *Cordeil* my yong doughter saide me treuthe whenne she saide as moche as I hadde so moche shulde I bene beloued. And alle the while that I hadde good tho was I beloued and honoured for my riches: but my two doughteres me glosed tho and now of me thei setten litel price. And sothe [truth] tolde me *Cordeil* but I wolde nought belyve hit ne ynderstonde: And therefore I lete hire gone fro me as a thing that I sette litel

And of his aunes distresse reports each thing.

Hee from Glamorgan this for truth doth bring,

That who by slaughter seekes a prince to bee,

As traytoure falles beneath his first degree.

price of and now wote I neuer what for to done sith my ij doughteres haue me thus deceyuede that I so moche louede. And nou mote I nedes sechen hire that is in another lande, tha lightly I lete hire gone fro me with oute eny rewarde of yiftes. And sheo said she loued me as moche as she aught hire fadre by al manere resonn: And tho I shulde haue axed of hire no more, and tho that me otherwise behighten thurgh hire fals speche nou haue me deceyued. In this maner Leir longe tyme him began to make his mone and at the laste he shope him to the see and passed ouer into Fraunce and axede and aspiede where the quene myghten bene founde and men tolde where that she was. And whenne he come to the cite that sheo was inne priuilliche he sente his squyer to the quene to telle here that hire fadere was comen to hier for grete nede. And whenne the squyer come to the quene he tolde hire euere dele of hire sustres fro the beginnyng vnto the ende. Cordeil the quene anone nome gold and siluer grete plente and toke hit to the squier in counsell that he shulde gone into a certeyn citee and him arrayen, bathen, and wessen, and then come ayein to hire and bringe with him an honest compaye of knyghtes, fourty atte the leste with hire mayne: and thanne he shulde sende to hire lorde the kyng and sein that he were comen for to speke with his doughter and him for to seen. And whenne the kyng and the quene herde that he come they hym receyued with mochel honour. The kyng of Fraunce tho lete sende thurgh alle his reame and comanded that al men to him shulde ben entendaunt to Lier the quenes fader in al maner of thing as hit were to himselfe. Whenne Lier hadde duelled their a monthe and more he tolde to the kyng and to the quene his doughter hou his tueyn eldest doughtres had him serued. Agampe anone lete ordeyne a grete hooste of Fraunce and sente hit into Britaine with Leir, the quenes fader, for to conquire his lande ayein and his kyngdome. And Cordeill also come with hire fader into Britaine for to haue the reame after heir fadres deth. And anone thei wente to shipp and passede the see and come into Brutaigne and foughten with the felons and ham scomfetede and quelde and Leir tho had his lande ayein and after leued iij yere and helde his reame in pees and afterward deid and Cordeil his doughtere him lete entere with mochel honour at Leycetere.—Whenne that kyng Leir was dede Cordeill his yongeste doughter helde and hadde the lande v yere and in the mene tyme deide here lorde Agampe that was kyng of Fraunce and efter his dethe she lefte wedowe. And tho come Morgan and Conadage, that wer Cordiell sistre sones, and to hire had enuye for as moche that hire aunte shuld haue the lande: so that betwene ham they ordeyned a grete pouer and vppon hire werrede gretely, and neuere they reste til that they hadde here taken and putte hire vnto dethe. M. S. Brute.

HOW KING MORGAN

of Albany was slayne at Glamorgan.

in Wales, The yeare before Christ,

766.

1.

I Wot not well what reasons I may vse,
To quit myselfe from lasting infamy :¹
Wherefore I must perforce myselfe accuse :
I was² in fault I cannot it denye.

Remorce of conscience pricks my harte so nye,
And mee torments with panges of pinching payne,
I can no longer mee from speache refrayne

2.

I am that *Morgan* sonne of *Gonerell*
Th'ungratefull daughter of hire father *Leire* :
Which from his Kingdome did him once expell,
As by the *British* storyes may appeare.
Ragan and shee conspirde (both sisters were)
But were subdude agayne and caus'd to yelde
Theyr fathers Crowne : *Cordila* wan the field.

3.

I need not heare the storyes all recite;
It were to long, but yet I briefly shall :
The cause *Cordila* ought her sisters spite
Was, they procur'd her, and their father's thrall.
Yet t'was her chaunce at length t'out liue them all,
Both sisters elder, and her father graue,
And eke at length the kingdome all to haue.

4.

That time was I of *Albany* the King,
Cal'd *Scotland* now, and eke my cousin then,

¹ Selfe from blame, blame worthy I. ed. 1575.

² Am. ib.

Of *Cornewall* and of *Wales*, whom I did bring
To warre, against *Cordila* and her men :

Wee sayd wee would our title winne agen,
And that because our fathers³ had it yore,
Wee ment to get it ours againe therefore.

5.

I must confesse I was the cause of warre,
I was not pleas'd with that was lotted mee :
Euen so our mindes ambitious often are
And blinded, that wee cannot reason see.

Wee thinke no men, but God's on Earth wee bee,
Yet worse are wee then beastes which knowe their kinde :
For wee haue nought but mischief e oft in mind.

6.

Wee thinke, if so wee may our willes attayne
By right or wrong, by might or malice, wee
Could neuer liue like Fortune for to gayne :
Or if one foes wee once reuenged bee,
If that our enemies⁴ fall wee chaunce to see,
O then wee ioy, wee lift our selues to skie,
And on the poore wee *crucifige* crye.

7.

I deem'd if once I might put her adowne,⁵
The Kingdomes all were *Conidag's* and mine :
And I could easly after winne the crowne,
If also I his state might vndermine.

I thought, in deede, to haue it all in fine :
By force or fraude I ment my purpose bring
To passe, I might bee after *Britayne* King.⁶

³ Mothers. ed. 1575.

⁴ Foe mens. N.

⁵ I deem'd if that I might once put her downe. N.

⁶ By force or fraud I did intend alone,
To sit as King vpon the Britaine throne. N.

8.

To speake in fewe, wee waged warre so long
 Gainst her, at last wee put her vnto flight :
 Wee warriours⁷ for our aunt were far to strong,
 Pursude and tooke, depriu'd her of her right.
 Wee thought it ours what so wee wanne by might :
 Eke so play tyrants, Traitours all doe watch
 To get by spoile and count their owne they catch.

9.

Not so contented were wee with the pray :
 But fearing lest shee should recouer ayde,
 I sent in hast to prison her away,
 And all recourse of messengers denayd.
 Thus when shee sawe her Maiesty decayd,
 And that her griefes and sorowes daily grew,
 In pryson at the length her selfe shee slewe.

10.

O caytife vile, should I constrain'd a Queene,⁸
 That Iustice ment, her kingdome to forsake ?
 Nay traytour I, her cause of death haue bene,⁹
 That would my selfe by bloudshed ruler make.
 How could reuenge on mee but vengeaunce take ?
 Before the seat of God her bloud did call
 For vengeaunce still, and so procur'd¹ my fall.

11.

Lo here God's iustice see, my treason see :
 Behold and see, to raygne was my delight :
 And marke, and make a mirrour here of mee,
 Which afterward was seru'd by iustice right.
 Wee wan the crowne betweene vs both in fight :

⁷ Nephewes. ed. 1575.

⁸ O caytife vile, that did constraine a Queene. N.

⁹ Nay traytour I as nowe by prooffe is seene. ed. 1575.

¹ For vengeaunce and at length procurde. ib.

And then because I was the elder sonne
Of th'elder Queene, I claymed all wee wonne.

12.

So were my dealings nought in peace and warre :
But by my force and fortunes v'sd in fight,
I past, that time, the *Britaynes* all by farre :
I was of person, fortitude, and might,
Both comely, tall, strong, seemely eke in sight,
Whereby I wonne mens fauoure, glory, wealth
And, puffed with pride, at length forgate my selfe.

13.

I sayd it was my right the crowne to haue,
But *Conidagus* stoutly it deni'd :
Wherefore I went to *Wales*, my ryght to craue,
With all mine army, and to haue it tri'd.
Where long wee fought it stoutly on eche side,
Till at the last, vnto my woefull payne,
I was depriu'd of Kingdome quite, and slayne.

14.

And for to keepe in memory for aye
That there vnfaythfull *Morgan* lost his life,
The place is cal'd *Glamorgan* to this daye.²
There was I perst to death with fatall knife :
There was the end of all my hatefull strife.
So *Morgan*, where hee thought to winne the Crowne,
Was at *Glamorgan* traytour stricken downe.

15.

Thus mayst thou tell how proude ambition proues,
What hap haue tyraunts, what wee Traytors haue :
What end hee hath that cruell dealing loues,
What subiects get the³ Diademe doe craue.

² Cunedagius "slough Morgan that was rebel ayanst him in Glamorgan in Wales, and by cause of that happe that countree is called Morgan's londe."
Polychronicon.

³ That. N.

Tis better, then to winne, thine owne to saue :
 For so orethwartly trade of Fortune goes,
 When win thou would'st, then art thou sure to lose.⁴

LENUOY.

1.

How restlesse are the peeres aloft would ryse ?
 How vncontented are theyr hauty myndes ?
 How quiet is the simple settled wise,
 Whom no desire of proud ambition blyndes ?
 I see no ease the seeke-throne thirsty findes.
 Hee seekes all meanes to clime to catch the crowne,
 Till for his haste *Ioue* hurle him headlong downe.

2.

The royall borne by birth, the time should stay
 Till iust *Iehoua* gaue to him the place :
 And not the Lordes anoynted seeke to slay,
 But as his Soueraigne serue him well the space.
 If hee with bloud his noble birth abace,
 I meane if hee by slaughter catch the crowne,
 With foote *Iehoua* castes him headlong downe.

⁴ THE AUTHOR.

With that Morganus quickly past away,
 The night me thought likewise was far epast,
 Whereby it wried me so long to staye,
 But Morpheus bad me bide and see the last,
 " (Quoth he) the stories passe away as fast,
 " As doth the tyme, and sith th'art nigh th'ende :
 " Thou nedste not grutche, so short a space to spend."

And turning then him selfe from me asyde,
 He calde the next which therewithall in sight
 Appear'd, and all his breste with bloud bedide.
 What chaunce (quoth I) hath so thy corps bedight,
 Thou worthy prince, or what mishaps of fight ?
 " I will (quoth he) with all my hart vnfolde
 " My fatall fall, and therewithall he tolde."

3.

If *Morgan* had not wrought his aunt's distresse
 By dint of sword, by sword hee had not fell.
 But who so shall by sword a Prince oppresse,
 Shall of the sword therefore and slaughter smell.
 Lo here the next, that came his tale to tell,
 Was gieuē to vice when once hee ware the crowne,
 Till slouth and sleepy sickenes cast hym downe.

HOW KING IAGO DY- ed of the Lethargy, about the yeare before Christ,

612.¹

1.

HAVE I oreslept my selfe, or am I wake?
Or hadst thou late oreslept thy selfe that wrote?
Could'st thou not for the Letharge paynes to take:
And with the rest his sleepy life to note?
Was I amongst the wicked wights forgote?
Well then, awaked sith wee are both twayne,
To write my sleepy sinfull life take payne.

2.

I am that *Iago*, once of *Britayne* King,
That ruled all this noble *Britishe* Ile:
No fame of mee the writers old doe bring,
Because my life and gouvernement was vile.
Yet, *Higgins*, heere take paynes for mee a while:
Enregister my mirour to remaine,
That Princes may my vices vile refrayne.

3.

At first, a while, I ruled well the land,
I vused Iustice, right tooke regall place:
No wight but found iust iudgement at my hand,
And truth durst shew, without rebuke, her face.
I gaue my selfe to all good giftes of grace,
My subiects liu'd in rest within my raygne,
No cause of Prince compeld them to complaine.

¹ This legend is not in the first edition.

4.

But as in calme a storme wee nothing feare,
 When as the Seas are milde and smoth as glasse :
 And as in peace no thought of warres wee beare,
 Which least suppose of mischeeues come to passe :
 Euen so my still and rightfull raygning was.

The calme a tempest boads : the shine, a raine :

Long peace, a warre : and pleasure, pinching paine.

5.

For rest and peace and wealth abounding thee
 Made mee forget my Iustice late well vsde :
 Forsaking vertues, vices gan to floe,
 And former noble acts I quite refusde.
 My giftes, my treasures, wealth and will misusde,
 Began all goodnes quite at length disdayn,
 And did my facts with filthy vices staine.

6.

Misgouern'd both my Kingdome and my life,
 I gaue my selfe to ease, to sleepe, and sinne :
 And I had clawbackes euen in Court full rife,
 Which sought by mine outrages gaines to winne.²
 For Kinges no sooner well or worse beginne,
 But euen at hand the good or bad take payn,
 For vertue's sake, or meede, the Prince to trayne.

7.

As vices grew encreasing more and more,
 So vertues fled and bade their friends adieu :
 Deseases bad likewise, and sicknesse sore
 Began to wexe, and griefes about mee grew.
 I may fullwell my naughty surfets rue,
 Which pesterd so at length my drousy brayne,
 I could not scarce from sleeping ought refrayne.

² Which sought by outrage golden gaines to winne. N.

8.

A sleepe sicknesse, nam'd the *Lethargye*,
 Opprest me sore, and feauers fearce withall:
 This was the guerdon of my glottonie,
Iehoua sent my sleepe life this dwall.
 So who so sleeping let sleepe Iustice shall,
 Although he feele no whit such slumbring payne,
 Yet may he write he hath not long to raygne.³

9.

Physicions wise may take on them the cure,
 But if *Iehoua* smite the Prince for sinne,
 As earst of me, then is the helpe vnsure,
 That's not the way for health to enter in.
 No potions then, nor pouders worth a pin:
 But euen as we, they must to die be fayne.
 Bid them in time from vices now refrayne.
 Who gouerns well, deserues with mighty *loue* to raygne.⁴

LENUOY.

1.

Remembring with my selfe this story past,
 When I agayne had tooke this worke in hand,
 I tooke my pen and wrote the same at last,
 Thereby to cause all Princes sloth aband.
 When they his fall set downe so vnderstand,
 They may beware: a warning this may be,
 Against the slothfull sweames of sluggardye.

A sleepe sicknesse, nam'd the Lethargie,
 Opprest me sore till death tooke life away:
 This was the guerdon of my gluttonie,
 As with the candles light the flie doth play,
 Though in the ende it worke her liues decay:
 So of the gluttons cup so long I drunke,
 Till drown'd in it with shamefull death I sunke. N.

⁴ This line omitted by Niccols.

2.

The stories tell of *Comodus* the raygne,
 A wise and noble Emperour at first:
 He diligent to gouerne well tooke payne,
 Till at the length him sloth in vice had nurst.
 But see at last, see whereunto it burst:

He strangled was by wicked treacherie,
 That gaue himselfe to sluggish libertie.

3.

I may no longer on this sleeper hyde,
 Which for his slouthfull sinne was serued right:
 Because himselfe to sluggishnes he plyde,
 That plague of sicknesse dead on him did light.
 But now beholde, next *Forrex* came to sight,
 Which in this sort beganne his life t'unfold:
 Eftsoones thus wise, his slaughter there he tolde.

HOW KING FORREX

was slayne by his brother King

Porrex, about the yeere before

Christ, 491.*

1.

COMPLAYNE I may with tragiques on the stage,¹
Compeld I am amongst the rest that fell:
I may complayne that felt of warres the wage,

¹ To tell my storie on the tragicke stage. N.

* In the first edition this legend is in quatrains.

*Forrex declares howe hee minding to kill his brother which ruled with him
(that he might therby raigne alone) was by him slain. About the
yeare before Christe, 491.*

PRIDE moues the mindes of stately wightes
Such hauty hartes to haue,
And causeth vs for glory vayne,
That is not ours to craue.

Pryde pluckes out reason forth hir place,
And planted will in stede:
She puffes our mindes with vayne desires,
Our fancies fonde to feede.

Wherby we growe so obstinate,
And so ambitious ill:
That vs at length our branery bids
In all things vse our will.

Ambition thinkes that lawefull is,
Which likes hir fancie best:
And demes she ought to haue hir forth,
And swinge before the rest.

She loues no mates, controlment shee
And warning doth despise:
She demes her selfe in all hir deedes,
And actions, wonders wise.

Vntimely death I drewe, doth mee compell.

If I had not bin crowned king I had bene well :²

There had no enuie vndermin'd my state,

Nor fortune foil'd the seate whereon I sate.

² I may complaine that felt god Mars his rage,
Alas, that fate to state should be so fell;
Had I been meaner borne I know right well. N.

She hath desire of this and that,
To get by crouche or clawe:
By right or wrong she forceth not,
She vseth will for lawe.

No kinde, or countrey she regards,
No mother, father shee:
Nor wyfe, or husbände, kithe or kin:
But enuies eche degree.

For if thy hart Ambition haue,
Thy greedy mynde to still:
Thou wilt not sticke thy dearest frende,
Or nerest kin to kill.

But as the prouerbe sayes that Pryde
Must needes at length haue fall:
Though we suppose of strength and powre
We haue the deuill and all.

Euen so I say: Ambition makes
Vs often clime so hie:
At length we fall, we come to nought,
And drownde in darkenes lye.

This may I Forrex well auouche,
By proufe to true I finde:
Wherefore I praye thee with the rest,
Do put my faultes in mynde.

My father olde, hight Gorboduge,
Raignde three score yeares and three:
And at his death gaue all his lande
Twene Porrex proude and mee.

Fiue yeares we helde it so in peace,
In reste we ruled well:
But at the last by pryde and wrath
We foule at discorde fell.

2.

What blisse enioyd I while my father raynd!³
 I had no care, in honour I did liue :
 Would God I had in that estate remaynd,

³ While that my kingly sire, *Gorbodug*, raign'd. N.

We eache encrochte on others partes,
 For rule we liu'de at strife :
 And eache did seeke occasion aye
 To reauē the others life.

I made this counte I elder was,
 By birth the realme was myne :
 By warre, or wrong, or bloud I ment
 To haue it all in fine.

And he although he yonger were,
 Esteemde his state so sure
 As mine : and thought it his, if hee
 My death might once procure.

My mother eke that lou'de me more
 Although he yonger was :
 By diuers meanes did helpe me still
 To bring my feates to passe.

Wherby I thought my selfe so sure
 To haue my purpose sped,
 As I requirde : if once I might
 Get of his crafty head.

See here what faith what frendship is,
 What loue what fauour wee
 Do shewe to any wight aliue,
 If once aloft we bee.

To fathers we are faithlesse ofte :
 To brothers, butchers vile :
 Of sisters small accounte we make,
 And wedded wyues exile.

If any kithe, or kin, we haue,
 By whom we vantage may :
 We care not by what cruell meanes
 Their liues we take away.

But for to get the seate alone,
 And for to wyne the crowne :
 We care not whom, nor when, nor how :
 So we may get them downe.

But what vs fortune wonted is to giue,
 Good happe that holds as water in a siue :
 Shee showes a glimpse of thousand ioyes, and moe,
 Which hides in it tenne thousand seas of woe.

3.

That hatefull hellish hagge of vgly hue,
 With rustie teeth and meygre corps misshape,
 I meane that monster vile, the worst in viewe,
 Whome some call *Discorde*, *Enuie*, *Ire*, and *Hate* :
 She set my brother first with me at bate :

O brutish beasts ! nay worse then those,
 For they are still content
 With that they haue, what euer them
 Hath God or Nature sent.

But we do gape, and gaze for glorie :
 We prowle, and powle, and pill,
 And sweare, and stare, and striue, and fight,
 And one another kill.

And all for pompe, and glorie great,
 For name, renowne, estate :
 Not caring of the commons crye,
 Or God's eternall hate.

If I had had the giftes of grace,
 I neuer would haue sought
 By any meanes such worldly trashe,
 With brother's blood to bought.

But as I ment euen so I sped,
 So bloody butchers thye :
 When moste I deemde my purpose sure,
 He was to good for me.

For as I thought his blood to shed,
 I compast was about,
 So that for thousand kingdomes, I
 Could not with life scape out.

He pearst my hart, what skilles it sith,
 My minde was euen as bad :

For why what measure I him mente,
 My selfe like measure had.

And so all such, as murder meane,
 Intende, or treason vse,

Shall at the length, like ende attayne,
 Or worse they cannot chuse.

When we fīue yeeres had raygned ioyntly well,
By her intisements, foule at strife we fell.

4.

We liu'd that space well in this noble Ile,
Deuyded well wee ioyntly did inioye
The princely seate, while Fortune fayre did smile,
Without disdayne, hate, discorde or anoye :
Euen as our father raignd, the noble *Roy*,
In wealth, peace, prayse, purporte, renowne and fame,
Without the blots of euerlasting blame.

5.

But when ambition bleared both our eyes,
And hasty hate had brother-hoode bereft :
Wee frendship fayre and concorde did dispise,
And far a part from vs wee wisdomē left :
Forsooke each other at the greatest heft.
To rule the kingdome both wee left, and fell
To warring, iarring like two hounds of hell.

6.

For bounds we banded first on either syde,
And did incroach each one on others right.
T'inlarge the limetes of our kingdome wide,
We would not sticke full oft to fray and fight.*
The wretched ground had so bewicht our sight.
For why, the earth that once shall eate vs all,
Is th'only cause of many Princes fall.

7.

On th'earth wee greeue the grounde for filthy gayne,
On th'earth wee close the earth t'inlarge our land :
In th'earth wee moyle with hunger, care, and payne,
Wee cut, wee dig thence Siluer, Gold, and Sand :
The bowels of the earth wee moyle with might of hand,

* Not sticke oft times in field to fight. N.

With Steele and Iron tearing vnder ground,
And rigging all the earth to make our ioyes abound.⁵

8.

For th'earth forget wee God, (vnfaythfull fooles)
For grounde forsake wee fayth and all our frends:
For th'earth wee set our selues to subtile schooles,
Of grounde lyke swine wee seeke the farthest ends:
Wee spoyle the grounde that all our liuing lends:
Of grounde to winne a plat a while to dwell
Wee venter liues, and send our soules to hell.

9.

If wee consider could the substance⁶ of a man,
How hee composed is of Elements⁷ by kinde,
Of earth, of water, ayre, and fire, than
Wee would full often call vnto our minde,
That all our earthly ioyes wee leaue behinde:
And when wee passe to th'earth wee turne to rot:
Our pompe, our pride, and glory is forgot.

10.

The fire first receaues his heate againe,
The ayre the breath bereaues away by right:
The watry and the earthly parts remaine,
Of elements composed scarce so light:
And in the ground a place is for them dight.
The moistures dry, the bones consume to dust,
The wormes with fleshe suffice their greedy lust.

11.

But wee forget our composition olde,
Both whence wee came, and whereunto wee shall:
Wee scarce remember wee bee made of mould,

⁵ Into her bowels by the force of hand,
With steele and iron we do dig profound,
Working her woe to make our ioyes abound. N.

⁶ If we behold the substance. N.

⁷ How he is made of elements. N.

And how the earth agayn consumeth all.
This great forgetfulnesse breedes Princes thrall.

While present ioyes wee gaze vppon, meane while
A fadeing blisse doth all our wits beguile.

12.

All this I speake to th'end it may aduise
All Princes great, and noble peeres that ar,
To learne by mee the rather to bee wise,
And to abandon hate and malice far:
To banishe all ambitious bloudy warre:
To liue content in peace, with their estate:
For mischiefe flowes from discord and debate.

13.

And now Ile tell what discord vile hath done
To mee King *Forrex*. Thus the case it stood.
I thought in deede to haue some castels wonne
And holds, which were my brother's, strong and good.
So might I intercept his vitayles, forrage, food,
Abate his pride, obtaine the Kingdome all:
Mee thought the halfe a portion was to small.

14.

Ther's no man takes an enterprise in hand,
But hee perswades him selfe it is not ill:
Hee hath of reasons eke in steede to stand,
As hee supposeth framed wise by skill.
So I was led by reason rude, to kill
My brother, if I caught him at the nicke,
Because the quarell first hee gan to picke.

15.

And for because I was the elder Prince,
The elder sonne, and heyre vnto the crowne:
Me thought no lawe, nor reason could conuince

Mee from the fact, though I did beate him downe.
 This was my way to winne and reape renowne.
 I did prouide an army strong, encamp⁸te a fielde,
 Not far from where I hoapte to cause him yeelde.

16.

And sundry sharpe assautes on each wee gaue,
 On purpose both enflamed for to fight :
 Wee had in parle receaued counsayle⁹ graue
 Of wise and worthy men, perswading right.
 ' It pitie was (they sayd) so fowle a sight,
 That brethren twayne, both Princes of a land,
 Should take at home such woefull warres in hand.'

17.

But where ambition dwelles is no remorse,
 No countrey's loue, no kinred holden kinde,
 No feare of God, no sentence wise of force
 To turne the harte, or mollify the minde :
 Good words are counted wasting of your wynde.
 The gayne proposde, the crowne and scepter hye,
 Are th'only thinges whereat men gaze and pry.

18.

At length my brother for to ende the strife,
 Thought best to worke the surest way to winne :
 He founde the meanes to take away my life,
 Before which time the warres could neuer linne.
 How much might better both contented binne !
 For hope is sloape,¹ and hold is hard to snatch,
 Where bloud embrues the hands that come to catch.

⁸ Armie strong for field. N.

⁹ Heard the counsell. N.

¹ Hope will slip. N.

19.

Thus our ambition brewde⁸ our subiecs smart :
 Our broyles pourde out their guiltlesse bloud on ground :
 Which vile deuise of mine ambitious heart
 Procured loue my purpose to confound.
 Therefore beware yee wights whose wealths abound,
 Content your selues in peace to spend your dayes,
 By vertues good aloft in earth your names to rayse :
 So shall you liue in Heauen with mighty loue alwayes⁹.

LENUOY.

1.

What cruell heartes had both these Princes then,
 To raigne alone, which sought their brother's life :
 These tyrants were no perfect noble men,
 But buchers rather raignyng all by knife :
 A woefull thing to heare such brother strife,
 Where loue aye lasting loyall should endure,
 That crowne or kingdome bloudshed should procure.

2.

And here you one thing chiefly haue to note,
 That his pretence was punisht as the fact :
 For hee no bloudshed wrought (as well you wote)
 But purposde was to worke a bloody act,
 And that both time and place therefore hee lact :

⁸ Bred. N.⁹ The concluding Alexandrine omitted by Niccolls.

THE AUTHOUR.

When as king Forrex thus had tolde his tale,
 Me thought he stayde no whit but went his way.
 Then came a mangled corps as full of bale,
 And or he nerer came made half a stay.
 (Quoth Morpheus) come, for shame thou nedste not stay,
 As bad as thou haue tolde their tales before,
 And so must thou and diuers other more.

M

Let such then know, as haue such thoughts in vre,
No murder stable Kingdome can procure.

3.

For if *Iehoua* did his purpose dint,
How much will hee the factours punish more:
Let noble men from such endeouours stint,
And loue embrace where hatred was before:
Iehouae's ioyfull impes embrace this lore:
For *Porrex* here can tell, they may bee sure,
No murder stable kingdome can procure.

HOW KING PORREX¹*which slewe his brother was slayne by**his owne mother and hir maydens,**about the yeare before Christ,*

491.

1.

CAN cursed *Cayne* that captiue scuse him selfe,
That slew his brother *Abel* innocent:

¹ The life of Porrex was also re-written. It is thus in the first edition.

Porrex recites howe for the slaughter of his brother, he was slaine by his owne mother and hir maydens, as he laye sleeping. About the yeare before Christ, 491.

FROM darkesome dennes, where cruel *Cayne*, Genes. 4.
And other like do lye:
Whose bloudie blades were bathde in bloud,
Poore caytiue thence come I.

Where *Typhon* is, his brother slewe, Annus.
Osiris in despite:
And where their sister *Isis* is,
Did him againe requite.

Where *Dardanus* to rule alone Virgil.
His brother made away: in culi.
Etheocles, *Polinices*,
At once did others sley.

Where *Helenus* king *Priam's* son Seruius. 3.
His brother *Theon* kilde. Aeneid.
Medea eke in bloody wyse, Ouid in
Hir brother's bloud that spilde. Ibin.

Where *Tydeus* is in hunting shote Statius.
His brother through the side:
Polytes eke his brother's harte
With sworde that opened wyde.

And where as that *Cambyses* is, Herodo-
His sister once that slewe: tus.
And *Polipontes* king that made, Gel. li. 4.
His brother treason rewe. cap. 3.

Or *Typhon* tell a reason for himselfe,
 Why hee *Osiris* downe² to *Lymbo* pent?
 King *Dardan* then may doe the lyke perdy,³
 They slewe their brethren each, and so did I.

² Or *Typhon* who for state and worldly pelfe,
 His deare *Osiris*. N.

³ Then to do the like may trie. N.

And cruell where *Odores* is,
 Which mercy did deny
 To *Mithridate* his brother deare,
 That did for pardon crie.

Herodo-
 tus. Eke where *Learchus* is, that did
 His brother sicke destroy:
 With poyson deadly hoping so,
 To make him selfe a Roy.

Ouid in
 Ibin. And where that wretche *Mamertes* lies,
 His brothers sonnes that spilte:
 And *Sisapho* tormenting him,
 For such an heynous gylte.

Plutarch.
 Laert. Where *Rhesus* and *Caduidus* are,
 With shaftes their brethren slewe:
 Volater. And *Philadelphus Ptolomæ*
 His brother's death did brewe.

Volater. Where *Philopater Ptolomæ*
 His father made away:
 And after that his brother with
 His dearest frendes did slay.

Plato. 10.
 de rep. And where *Ardieus*, tyraunt vile,
 His aged father stroyde,
 And after that his elder brother,
 Kingdomes to enioyde.

Cælius. Where *Mithridates*, beastly king,
 Of *Pontus* feeles anoye:
 Which mother his, and brother eke,
 Sixe children did destroye.

Volater. Where is *Antiochus* the great,
 His brother brought to graue:
 That he might onely raigne alone,
 And all the kingdome haue.

2.

The wicked witch *Medæa* rent in peeces smalle
Absirtus limmes her brother, did not shee?
 Shee threw him in the way dismembred all,
 That so hir father's iourney stayde might bee:

Where Romulus, that Remus slew,
 Of Romaines, first had fall:
 Though louing brother first he were,
 Presunde to scale the wall.

Liuius.
 Lucan.
 Ouid.

And where Mempricius lewde doth lye,
 A Britayne Prince that slue,
 His brother Manlius fearing lest
 He were to him vntrue.

Flores
 Histor.

Where Iurgurth eke that basterde is,
 His brethren brought to graue:
 That after them Numidia
 He might for kingdome haue.

Salust.

And where a thousande are beside,
 Which were to long to tell,
 Their parentes deare and brethren slue,
 And now in darkenes dwell.

From thence I came a Britayne yore,
 Namde Porrex once a king:
 Againe to shewe what vices mee
 To sodaine death did bring.

Now list a while and then do write,
 What I thee tell, that others may
 Themselues in such attempts as these,
 From bloudy acts, as brethren stay.

My brother Forrex fise yeares space,
 And I this kingdome helde:
 Betweene vs both the common weale,
 We scace did wisely welde.

At length we fondly fell at strife,
 So Princes bide no mate,
 Nor make, nor partners, with to raigne
 But beare their equals hate.

The heire because I yongest was,
 Thought his by right the crowne:
 But I esteemde the halfe was mine,
 And all if he were downe.

Orodes eke did sley his brother ⁴ *Mithridate* :
And so did I my brother [*Forrex*] in debate.

⁴ Orodes slew his brother: N.

Whereby, O brothell, butcher eke,
Not brother I did slay:
My brother for to haue it all,
And get his right away.

Such are the acts of heedelesse youthes,
Such are their studies still:
Which care not what offence they make,
So they their fancies fill.

But as it is vniustice, and
An haynous acte to vse:
Such murder, slaughter, parricide
And iustice all refuse.

So Ioue the iust at length requites
Our deedes: and makes vs rewe
We euer were, to God, or man
Or nature's hestes vntrue.

For when I deemde the crowne was mine,
Which had my brother slayne,
O grieve to tell, my mother, and
Hir maydens wrought my payne.

Both for my fault, and for she lou'de
My brother *Forrex* still:
With all hir maydes she came by night,
My sleeping corps to kill.

And I that slombring sleeping lay,
Though many dreames fortolde
My haplesse fall, could neuer wake,
The meaning to vnfolde.

But last supposing with my selfe,
I cruell *Tigres* sawe,
With rauening fearcenes rent their yong,
Against dame Nature's lawe.

She came on me to fill my dreame,
Before my eyes could wake,
And with a dagger reft my life,
For *Forrex* slaughter's sake.

3.

Learchus slewe his brother for the Crowne,
So dyd *Cambyses* fearing much the dreame:

Antiochus [the great] of infamous renowne
His brother slewe, to rule alone the realme:

Ardieus dyd the lyke for kingdome's sake,
So dyd my selfe like wise away my brother take. ^s

^s So I my brother's life away did take. N.

Much like *Agaue* and his mates,
Shee and hir maydens got
Them tooles therefore, and hewde my corse,
As small as fleshe to pot.

Virgil in
Culice.

Or *Progne* Queene hir children slue,
and hewde their membres small:
In wrathfull ire made *Tereus* feede,
and fil himselfe withall.

Ouid. 6.
Metamor.

Or like *Medea* monster Queene,
hir *Iason's* sonnes that kilde:
Because she was forsaken when
his purpose was fulfild.

Virgil. 8.]
Aegl.

Like these was shee, nay worse, for why,
This ended *Brutus* lyne:
Brought me to ende and hir to shame,
though first the fault were mine.

Bid those beware that weene to winne,
by bloudy acts the crowne:
Lest from the height they feelee the fall
of topsy turuye downe.

For if when they suppose themselues
aloft to touch the skie,
There chaunce a storme, there is no holde
to staye themselues so hie.

But faster farre, more swiftly they,
and with more swinge descende,
Then euer erst they could with all
there force to clime contende:
Do bid them then in all their deedes
marke well the finall ende.

4.

Mempricius lewde of lyfe likewise did kill
 His brother *Manlius*, for the same intent :
 These Princes vile were brother sleyers ill,
 For kingdomes sake vnnaturally bent :
 But reade the storyes, thou shalt finde it playne
 The bloody wretches all were after slayne.

5.

Euen so I *Porrex* eke, which slewe my brother,
 And ruled once the *Britayne* land with him,
 Vnkindly kilde was by my cruell mother,
 Which with hir maydens chopt mee euery limme :
 As I lay sleeping on my bed at rest,
 Into my chamber full and whole they prest.

6.

Apoynted well they were with weapons sharpe,
 And boldly layde on me with all their might :
 Oft quite and cleane they thrust me through the heart,
 And on my corps each where theyr weapons light :
 They chopt me small (I say) as flesh to pot,
 And threwe mee out my limes yet trembling hot.

7.

Can I complayne of this reuenge shee raught,
 Sith I procurde hir wrath by slaughter⁶ of hir sonne ?
 Can I excuse my selfe deuoyde of faut,
 Which my deare Prince and brother had fordonne ?
 No ; 'tis to true that, who so slayes a King,
 Incurrs reproch, and slaughter bloud doth bring.

8.

The traytours to their Prince haue alwayes binne
 As sleyers of their parents, viper's broode :
 The killers of their brothers, frends, and kinne,
 In like degree well nigh of treason stooode :

⁶ Procur'd the slaughter. N.

But what by this winne they, saue death, defame,
Distayne theyr bloud, and shroude themselues with shame.

9.

Example take you Princes of the ⁷ land,
Beware of discord, shun ambitious pride :
By right take yee the scepter in your hand,
Let not your sword with soueraignes bloud be dide :
The mighty Ioue, that raignes eternall ay,
Cuts of the Kings that enter in that waye.

10.

Vsurpers may perswade themselues a while
There is no God, no lawes of sacred crowne,
No wrong they doe, no murther seemeth vile,
Nor no respect of princely high renowne :
But if they could consider well the case,
They nild exalt themselues to Princes place.⁸

11.

They would example take by *Lucifer*
That was cast downe, the father first of pride :
And al his impes how high so ere they were,
Vsurping Realmes and Kingdomes farre and wide :
From light to darke, from throne to thrall they fell,
From hap to hate, from life to death, from heauen to hell.⁹

12.

Sufficient here is sayd to warne the wise,
For he by prudence oft forecasts the doubt :
The foole is bent all warnings to despise,
He runneth headlong with the rascall rout :

⁷ This. N.

⁸ They would not so aspire to Princes place. N.

⁹ From bale to blisse and downe from heauen to hell. N.

Then if thou cast to live at rest a subiect good,
Touch not the Prince's fame, crowne,¹ scepter, nor his blood.²

LENUOY.

1.

It lothed me a L'enuoy here to write
Of such a cruell, proude, ambitious beast :
But yet sith now his faultes he doth recite,
And warnes for murther's venge alieue the rest,
Which had therefore againe his death addrest,
I will (though he deseru'd no tale to tell)
Set downe his fall for sample seruing well.³

2.

The good deserue to haue their praises wrote,
To spread their fames, t'incourage those alieue :

¹ Touch not the Prince, crowne, scepter, &c. N.

² THE AUTHOR.

Next after Porrex came an other such,
Had all his body quite in peeces rent :
A desperate man, his life bewayling much :
Which for he seemed sorely to lament,
I was the rather him to heare content :
That I might also note his story here,
From like attempts of vices you to feare.

[Here follows the tragedy of Kimarus, as at p. 208.]

³ The author has followed the authority of the Polichronicon in making Porrex the survivor. In the chronicle by Harding and other authorities their destiny is reversed ; though generally it is stated, that the conqueror obtained the kingdom through the powerful aid of the king of France. Upon the story of these brothers was founded the tragedy of Gorboduc, produced by Norton and Sackvile in 1561, which was one of the earliest legitimate productions of the English drama. The murderous events of their history seem not to have been considered sufficient to maintain the interest of the play, and the traditionary tale was deviated from by making the old king Gorboduc survive his sons, and to fall a sacrifice with the queen, to the rage of the multitude. But this accumulation of horror was in taste with the times, and Sir P. Sidney describes the piece as " full of morality, which it doth most delightfully teach, and thereby obtain the very end of poetry."

Of wicked Princes wee the falls doe note,
 A *Caveat* for kingdomes where they striue :
 To show that who so slaughters doth contriue,
 (Though hee deserue agayne no tale to tell)
 His tragique fall may serue ensample well.

3.

These brethren quellers *Brutus* bloud bereft,
 Which were last Kings that fate of all his line :
 Six hundreth yeares and sixteene, or they lefte,
 They raygnde, and thus they spoilde themselues in fine.
 The ciuill warres insued hereof long time.
 About the crowne I list not here define.
 But of intruders three⁴ that after fell,
 As came to fight in order next I tell.

⁴ The three formed part of a pentarchy, whereon the chronicles are uniform as to the obscurity.

HOW KING PINNAR

was slain in battayle by Mulmucius

Donwallo, about the yeare before Christ,

441.¹

1.

MIGHT often times ouer runnes right² to fast,
Right commeth after³ and hopes to haue his owne:
And when [agayne] hee ouertakes might at the last,
Then is the truth of all the quarell knowne.

Men neuer reape no other then was sowne:

If good were the gayne,⁴ the better commes the crop:

On vine growes the grape, and not the biter hop.⁵

2.⁶

Of this that I haue sayd I would this inferre:

A man by might a while may perforce withholde.

A kingdome not his owne: but hee farre better were

To yeeld vnto the right, and then hee may bee bolde.

Good metall bides the touch that trieth out the gold:

When copper playne appeares, the counterfaite in cast

Is counted but as drosse, and called in at last.

3.⁷

I am that *Pinnar* once a *Britayne* King,

No pinner by my science for to make pinnes:

¹ Not in the first edition.

² Right ouerrunnes. N.

³ After comes. N.

⁴ If good be gaine. N.

⁵ The grape growes on the vine and not the hop. N.

⁶ Of this now spoken, this would I inferre,
Men may by might a kingdome long withhold
Not due to them: but they far better were
To yeeld vnto the right, what reason would.
Good mettals bides the touch, which tries the gold,
When copper counted counterfeit in cast,
Is deem'd but drosse and called in at last. N.

⁷ I am that Pinnar, who when Brutus blood
Extincted was in bloodie Porrex raigne,

And yet I could well cast of thousands in a ring,
 To catch the common wealth I made many ginnes.
 Let him that learns my science, tell mee what he winnes.
 For tirrany, and robbery, conspiracy, and wrong,
 Prognosticats of rebells raigne, they cannot prosper long.

4.⁸

When I to mee had gote a rascall rable rude
 Of roisters, ruffians, ronagats, and knaues,
 I did my selfe at last into the throne intrude,
 And was susteynd therein by billes, swords, and staues :
 I made of them officers that were before but slaues :
 Oppressing of the good and polleing of them still,
 For to inriche the bad and mayntayne all their ill.

5.⁹

Duke *Cloten* of *Cornwall* was heire to the crowne.
 But I, with other rebells, kept him from his right.
 Though wee were conspiratours voide of all renowne,
 Yet did wee raigne, and keepe him out by might.
 But when his sonne *Donwallo* came for to fight,
Mulmucius, that was in armes a worthy man,
 With me and them to try the quarell hee began.

Amongst the Princes in contention stood,
 Who in the Britaine throne by right should raigne :
 Mongst whom by might a part I did obtaine,
 That part of Albion call'd Logria hight,
 I did long time vsurpe against all right. N.

⁸ Stater who stept into the Scottish throne,
 And Rudacke, that vsurpt the Cambrian crowne,
 Their minds to mine did frame and ioyn'd in one,
 To keepe the Cornish Prince stout Cloten downe,
 Twixt whom and vsin fighting, for renowne
 Faire Ladie Albion Europes wondred Ile,
 Rob'd of her beautie was, alas the while. N.

⁹ Duke Cloten, though a man of worthie praise,
 Who claim'd the crowne as due to him by right :
 Could not preuaile till death did end his daies,
 His sonne Mulmucius that yndaunted Knight
 Pursu'd his fathers claime with all his might,
 And meeting vs in many a bloodie field,
 At length in manly fight did make vs yeeld. N.

6.¹⁰

Hee brought of *Cornishmen* a royall army good,
 With other subiects late by me before opprest :
 And made mee pay the price of pillage with my bloud,
 As traitour slayn in field, example for the rest.
 Euen so who euer shall from Prince the scepter wrest,
 Vsurpe from him the crowne, or scale the throne of state,
 Shall shortely feele the rod of God's immortall hate.

LENUOYE.

1.

Thus though vnorderly his tale hee tell,
 As was his raygne, yet orderly it standes :
 Euen such decorum deckes the person well,
 Who in his life decorum due abandes.
 No fyner fyled phrase could scape my handes,
 When I began for him to pen the same :
 Let *Pinnar* then receiue thereof the blame.

2.

And now you must suppose did next appeare
 Another Prince, in warlike armour clad,
 With bleeding woundes, as if newe slaine hee were :
 Reciting first the hauty haps hee had,
 And then his fall in fight, his Fortune bad.
 If hee vnstatelike stammer out the same,
 With staylesse staggering footed verse, by ame,
 Let hardly him receiue thereof the blame :
 Or geue the faute to th' countrey whence hee came.

¹⁰ He Lion-like himselfe with his all troope
 Of nimble Cornish met vs on the way,
 And to his conquering arme did cause vs stoope,
 The price of treason I with blood did pay,
 My wrong deem'd right appear'd in my decay.
 Who so by violence scales the throne of State,
 Seldome sits sure, but falles by violent fate. N.

HOW KING STATER OF Scotland was slayne by Mulmucius Don- wallo, about the yeare before Christ, 441.¹

1.

STINT not in stories truely for to tell²
The fall of vsurpers, the presidents³ of pryde.
Recite of our treasons, and how that wee fell,
Intruders vntrusty the Realme for to guide :
Of wit and of reason recklesse and wide,
That tooke so vppon vs to rule all the land,
No Princes presume yet with scepter in hand.

2.

How stately I *Stater*, of Scotland the King,
Did beare mee full stoutely when I had the crowne :
And what a great army of *Scots* I did bring,
Against Lord *Donwallo*, of noble renowne.
A deemed dame Fortune would neuer so frowne,
Who made me a Prince, that Kingdome my pray,
Of late but a subiect and simple of sway.

3.

But here now behold how steady the state
Of climbers aloft is aboue their degree,
And how they doe fall from fortune to fate,
Example are such as my fellow and me.
The fruite giues a taste of the sappe of the tree,
The seede of the herbe, the grape of the vine :
The worke wrayes the man, seeme he neuer so fine.

¹ Not in the first edition. It is scarcely necessary to notice to the reader the change to the anapæstic metre in this short life, which the author has just called "staylesse staggering footed verse."

² Desist not in histories truly to tell. N. ³ Mirrours. N.

4.

For when I had leuyed an armie to fight,
 I ioyned with *Pinnar*, my power to preuayle :
 And *Rudacke* of *Wales* came eke with his might,
Mulmucius Donwallo the King to assayle.
 Our purpose the Prince by prowes did quaile,
 Which came out of *Cornwall*, vs vanquisht in field,
 Our souldiers slayne, skard, taken, forced to yeelde.⁴

5.

O fortune I blame thee, my selfe more vnwise :
 Thou gau'st me a kingdome, and with life I it lost.
 My souldiers were slayne fast before⁵ mine owne eyes,
 Or forced to flie, yeelde, and smell of the rost.⁶
 I neede not of honour or dignitie boast,
 Or tell of my triumphes, or crake of my crowne :
 The vaunt of vsurpers is voyde of renowne.

LENUOY.

1.

A worlde it is to see the meaner sort
 Enhaunce themselues aboue their due degree :
 To sit aloft they deeme a noble sport,
 From whence they may the worlde and people see.
 But so they speede as their deseruings bee.
 Still triall telles, Iehoua tumbles downe
 Such subiectes false as dare assume the crowne.

2.

For if these Pagans proud so plagued were,
 Which tooke on them ambitiously the sway,
 Wil not th'almightie's Iustice soone appeare,

⁴ Our souldiers were slaughter'd, or forced to yeeld. N.

⁵ Were killed before. N.

⁶ Or forced to yeeld & abandon the coast. N.

When Christian men their Christian Kinges betray?

Yes: he (by whome all Princes raigne for aye)

Such subjectes smites, as dare assume the crowne,

And from the throne intruders tumbles downe.

3.

But now beholde and marke this story well,

Which next in order seemes his tale to frame,

With bleeding woundes in field likewise that fell,

For so me thought in warlike sort he came,

The last of these that *Rudacke* had to name,

Declaring how *Bellona* strooke him downe,

Because he had vniustly caught the crowne.

N

HOWE KING RV-

dacke of Wales was slayn by Mul-

mucius Donwallo about the yeere

before Christ 441.¹

1.

RUDE are the reuelles royaltie that rape,
Restlesse the raygues of rebels in the robe,
Reckles the rage where cruelty doth scrape,
Roundnesse regarded² but little of the globe,
No man ambitious prudent with the probe,
Crownrape accounted but cunning and skill,
Bloudshead a blockhouse to beate away ill.

2.

The rudenesse of rebels reaching the crowne,
May be compared to *Bladhud's* devise:³
[But] better sit still than fall so farre downe,⁴
If Lordes could by others hurt learne to be wise.⁵
My selfe of [high] climbing haue payde well the price,
That rudely in throne myselfe did install
Aloft, not regarding how low I might fall.

3.

When *Britayne* was restlesse, wanting a Kyng,
(For *Forrex* and *Porrex* the Princes were slayne)⁶
The land many peeres ambitious did wring,
Endeuouring each the kingdome to gayne,
The heires good apparent forsake it were fayne,
The subiects were armed, wee nobles did striue,
At length we amongst vs deuision contriue.

¹ Not in the first edition.

² Esteem'd. N.

³ *Bladhud's* fond deuice. N.

⁴ Adowne N.

⁵ By my mishaps let other men be wise. N.

⁶ (For *Forrex* hight and *Porrex* both were slayne. N.)

4.

Then recklesse wee were when all was at rest,
 And each had a kingdome aloted his part :
 The vice of the subjects dayly increast,
 And justice and right were layd quite apart.
 The lawes ouerlashed by couine and craft,
 And wee that did gouerne did winke at this geare :
 The worser, perdy, our faythed frends were.⁷

5.

The ball that dame Fortune emparteth of blisse
 Is golden to gaze on, but voluble round :
 If once of your handfast in holding you misse,
 Away then it rolet, and you are on ground.
 Of watchers thereon so many abounde,
 And catchers thereat, with snatching therefore,
 That if once you leese it, you catch it no more.

6.

A Chirurgian that taketh a wounde for to cure,
 If skilfull and carefully hee sercheth it furst :
 The sea man doth sounde to take the depth sure,
 Ay wisdom well taught for feare of the worst.
 But our vile ambition, blinde, blockish, accurst,
 Not prouing the sore, nor reckoning the sounde,
 Our shippes and our science we sinke and confounde.

7.

Ambition out sercheth to glory the greece,
 The staire to estate, the grapple of grace :
 But in her is hidde of perill a peece,
 Which all our attempts doth dimme and deface.
 Perdy shee gets vs vaine ioyes⁸ but a space,
 Short, brittle as glasse : false fayre giueing light :
 Not golden, though glittering braue in the sight.

⁷ The worser thereby our faithfull friends were. N.

⁸ We do enioy her vaine ioyes. N.

8.

For when see hath brought vs vnto the throne,
 And Fortune hath fraught vs with honour at fill:
 Then there to sit stedy and rule all alone
 Wee racke our deuices, and scud with our scill.
 Wee cutt off occurrences, wee prole, pole, and pill:
 Wee bolster, wee band out, to brybe, banish, sley,
 The pillers of prudence that prop⁹ in our wey.

9.

Our race is then restles, our sleeping vnsounde:
 Our wakeing is warfare, our walkeing hath woe:
 Our talkeing is trustless, our cares doe abound:
 Our fauners deemde faythfull, and frendshippe a foe.
 Which troubles our fancies so tosse to and froe.
 That scarcely wee neuer inioy any rest
 Tormented, whome Fortune exalted and blest.

10.

This thing can I witnesse what troubles ensue,
 What cares doe vs compass enhaunced aloft:
 I therefore wish rebells to take better vewe
 Of the falles of intruders, recorded so oft.
 Who climeth so highe his fall is not soft.
 If once hee doe stagger or falter aside,
 Hee cannot recouer the rest for to guide.

11.

When I with my felowes (our selues which thought sure)¹
 Here ruled the realme, there fell out a flawe:
Donwallo did seeke the Crowne to procure,
 Alleadging a title thereto by the lawe.
 He when him resisting in armes bright vs sawe,²
 Came strayght with an hoaste prepared to fight,
 With sworde for to trye out whose title was right.

⁹ Stand. N.

¹ When I who with others did thinke myselfe sure. N.

² Who, when to field our power we did draw. N.

12.

Our numb're was great, our title vniust :
 Our consciences guilty, our souldiers agast :
 Our enemy with honour³ had souldiers of trust :
 And Fortune was frendly to them as they past.
 They slewe of our men by manhoo'de full fast,
 Or forst them to flye : In the feelde wee were fayne
 To resist⁴ them (poore Prynces) and so wee were slayne.

13.

First *Pinnar*, then *Stater*, I *Rudacke* likewise
 At last was with number oppressed dispatcht,
 Let Lordings beware how aloft they doe rise,
 [For] by Princes and commons they'r climbing is watcht.
 No sooner they haue at the scepter once snatcht,
 But guilty themselues they deeme worthy to die,
 And God's iustice such sentence [t'accomplish] doth hie.

LENUOY.

1.

You see the end of rebelles here descride,
 Entruders see whereto they haue to truste :
 Their seat vnshure and slippery downe doth slide,
 Their names are eaten out with cankerd ruste.
 They'r honours soone lay tounbling in the duste.
 Wherefore I count them triple thrise and foure times blest,
 Which prudently to serue their God and Prince are prest.

2.

Sith stories all doe tell in euery age
 How these crowne croachers come to shamefull ends,
 And how they shortely winne the woefull wage,
 Which for vniustice *Ioua* iustely sends :

³ Donwallo with honour. N.⁴ Oppose. N.

Let hauty headstrong heede what hee pretends,
 Sith hee aliue, in death, and after's only blest,
 Which prudently to serue his God and Prince is prest.

3.

But now behold, from *Delphos* next in place
 A noble valiaunt *Britayne* there I vewde,
 Of stature tall, well sett, of comely grace,
 With body broysde, and armoure all embrewde.
 His wounded breast my woefull hart berewde:

Whose life and death may proue contented wights are blest,
 Which prudently to serue their God and Prince are prest.

HOW THE NOBLE

King Brennus, after many triumphant

victories, at the seege of Delphos in

Greece slew him selfe, about the yeare before Christ,

375.¹

1.

AMONGST the noble martiall worthy men,
Renowned farre, victorious great of fame,
Though Autors sound my praise eftsoones agen
Emongst the *Britayne* Princes write the same:
I am that *Britayne* once that *Brennus* had to name,
My facts, exployts in warre, my conquests life and end,
Doe write as I recite, when time doth leasure lend.

2.

The mighty Monarche of this noble Ile
Mulmucius (conquerde tyranne Princes three
They by intrusion rayning here long while)²
Was father both to *Belinus* and mee.
His noble acts and lawes commended bee.
This *Belinus* (mine elder brother) was his heire,
And Queene *Cornwenna* was our mother wise and fayre.

3.

When after him my brother had the crowne,
Hee was content to make mee eke a king:
Hee gaue mee *Albany*, where with renowne
I rulde a while by Iustice euery thing:
But at the last ambition made me bring
An army thence, agaynst my brother for to fight,
Which rather ought t'aue honorde him with homage right.

¹ Not inserted in the first edition.

² *Mulmucius* who with conquering blade did free
The Britans troubled state from tyrants vile. N.

4.

When *Belinus* perceiued mee approach
 Vnto his Realme, an army hee addrest:
 He warned me I should not seek t'incroatch
 That was not mine, for hee was ready prest
 Mee to repell: hee wilde mee bee at rest,
 I marched one, the armies met, wee fearcely fought,
 My souldiers slayne, to saue my selfe by flight I sought.

5.

To *Norwaye* then I fledde for succour hence,
 Where good *Elsingus* reigne the gentle King:
 I tolde him what I was, and eke of whence,
 Desirde his ayde, me home agayne to bring,
 And he not only graunted me this thing,
 But eke his daughter *Samye* fayre to be my wife,
 With me to passe in *Albany* for aye a Princely life.³

6.

But while we were prouiding ships and men,
 The fame abroad of my returne was spread,
 And *Guthlake* that was King of *Denmarke* then,
 Prouided with a nauie mee forlead:
 The loue of *Samye* so enragde his riual head,⁴
 That for her sake he must perforce my ships [and me] forlay,
 To win by fight or take by might the⁵ Lady faire away.

7.

And when our nauies mette, he wilde me yeelde
 This Lady straight, or else defend the cause:
 A thing (quoth I) requested erst but seelde,
 Against of Gods and men the sacred lawes:
 It hath not erst bene harde amongst the wise men's sawes,⁶

³ With me in Albany to leade a princely life. N.

⁴ His eie on Samye's beautie had so fed. N.

⁵ By force of armes to beare the. N.

⁶ Erst bene heard mongst wise men sawes. N.

That any King should clayme the like with sword of stormie strife,
Or make assaulte in warlike sorte to winne a Prince's wife.⁷

8.

From wordes to fight we fell on eyther side,
But in the ende I was discomfit there,
And yeelded⁸ her that listed scarce abide,
For she to him before did fauour beare :
By tempest then our nauies seuered were,
And he perforce by storme on shores of *Britayne* cast,
Was fayne for tribute hostage giue to *Beline* or he past.⁹

9.

At Seas turmoylde fīue dayes with raging winde,
Sore wearied with the fight, the foyle and losse,
And casting with my selfe in woefull minde,
The cause why so God *Neptune* did me tosse,
Why boyling Seas with surges so me sosse,¹
I made a vowe to kill the man that causde me flye,
Or with my bloud the kingdome all from him to buy.

10.

The Seas alayde, at last my ships I found
And rigde againe, at seas met of our foes²
Some³ wandring *Danes*, where we beset them round
In warlike sorte, we did them all inclose :
Euen so the wheele of Lady Fortune goes,
Abiects, castes downe, turnes topsie toruie quight,
The men of late extold with all her mayne and might.

11.

These ships my wants in some respect supplyde
With tacle, armour, vitayles and the rest

⁷ ———— the like by strife,
Or make assault by wrong to winne a Prince's wife. N.

⁸ But on his side the conquest did appear,
I yeelded her. N.

⁹ For tribute hostage gaue to *Beline* ere he past. N.

¹ And why false fortune my attempt did crosse. N.

² At seas we met our foes. N. ³ The. N.

And so to *Britayne* land apace I hyde,
 For kingdome lost to make againe request,
 Or else by might and force away to wrest
 The scepter from my brother *Beline*, and the crowne,
 Which lay that time by North at *Euerwyke* the towne.

12.

To lande I came, and did menace my brother sore,⁵
 But he an armie did with speede addresse,
 Which mette me straight at th'entry on the shore,
 Our battayles ioyn'd and fought with valiantnesse :
 But I was put in th'end to such distresse,
 To ships I flewe and tooke a fewe with me beside,
 And hoysing sayles for hap to *Gallia* strands I hyde.

13.

Ariued there, I trauayld long to see
 The nature of the Countrey and the men :
 And for my purpose I disposed mee,
 To please the Princes and the people then,
 In hope to see my countrey once agen,
 To winne my noble kingdome or to wreacke the wrong
 That I sustaynd, exile from native soyle so long.

14.

When I had tolde the great mishaps I had
 Vnto the Peeres of *Fraunce*, some ayde to craue,
 I could obtaine no succour me to glad,
 Nor men, munition, ships, ne vitayles haue :
 I gate me thence to Duke *Seginus* graue,
 Of *Prouence* then the Prince renowned noble farre,
 For prudence prompt in peace and wisdom great in warre.

15.

This worthie Duke receiued me with ioy,
 (For of afflicted wights he had remorse)

⁵ And threatned *Beline* sore. N.

He hearde me oft declare the great anoy
 That I had felte, and of my brother's force :
 Howe *Guthlacke* did my wife and me diuorce,
 The broyles at Sea, the toyles I taken had at land,
 Which neuer coulde the face of Fortune's foyle withstand.

16.

Thou *Britayne* tall (quoth he) I rue thy fate,
 Thou noble Prince (for so thou art in showe)
 If I could now restore thee thine estate,
 Thou shouldst perceyue what fauour I thee owe ;
 'Tis Fortune's vse t'exalte and ouerthrow ;
 My counsayle then is this expect her grace a while,
 Till where she frownes she turne her frendly face and smile.

17.

So in his court he did me intertayne,
 Where long I liu'd and bare my selfe full well :
 Some times to play the captaine I was fayne,
 To winne some praise as causes did compell,
 For when his subiects eyther did rebell,
 Or confines made inroads to spoyle or pray his land,
 Then I was one that had the charge to take the warres in hand.⁶

18.

In armour fearce and stout, and strong was I,
 God *Mars* me gaue a stearne and stormie looke,
 With feates of armes by land or seas to trye,
 Experience taught me what I vndertooke :
 No payne, no toyle, nor daunger I forsooke,
 That might content the noble Duke of *Sauoy's* minde,
 Whose bountie me to honour him and serue his grace did bind.⁷

19.

In peacefull milde I was of comely grace,
 And wise in talke as time occasion gaue,

⁶ Then appointed was to take the warre in hand. N.

⁷ Whose bounteous grace for aye my loue to him did bind. N.

And (though I say't) I had a Princely face,
 I coulde both hunt and hawke, and court it braue :
 Eke Fortunes past had made me sage and graue,
 More heedy all attemptes to prosecute with skill,
 Rash hastie men (by prooffe I found) incurre the greatest ill.^s

20.

When Duke *Seginus* sawe my humble harte,
 A regall *Britayne* Prince, of royall bloude,
 How I employde my selfe and all my arte,
 Mine actiue feates with grace and prowes good,
 To serue and quayle his foes that him withstoode,
 He gaue his daughter rich to me, a peerles [princely] dame,
 His only heyre, and Dukedome⁹ after him to guide the same.

21.

By her (when hee was deade) I *Sauoye* had,
 A countrey fertile famous for the soyle ;
 With liberall giftes the souldiers hartes I glad,
 To winne the restes good will I tooke some toyle,
 By banquets, iewels, giftes, or warlike broyle :
 Stil vsing all the meanes t'obeysaunce them to moue,
 Eke all the wayes that might allure them me to loue.

22.

And settled so in honour greate at rest,
 Without the feare of forayne foes, or nye :
 I mused what for *Britayne* warres was best,
 Which way I might agayne my quarell trye :
 Such restles heades haue they that sitte on hye !
 O poore estate, how blest were thou that sitste below,
 How happy, safe and sure, if thou thy state couldst know

23.

A councill called for the same intent,
 I told the Lordes my purpose for the warre,

^s Rashnes (by prooffe I found) incurs the greatest ill. N.

⁹ With her his Dukedome. N.

How I to haue my kingdome here was bent,
They all agreed to levy nere and farre,
Such souldiers good and captaynes stoute that were,
They offered seruice eke themselues to fare with mee,
To winne the crowne by sworde or els reuenged bee.

24.

Concluding thus, a powre prouided was,
Munition good, and vitayles, shipping strong,
On voyage so with hoysed sayles wee passe,
Wee cut the seas and came apace along
To *Britayne* shores in hope to wrecke the wrong
That oft before was done, or winne the land agayne
Whence whilome twice I was to fly with daunger fayne.

25.

When wee were landed here, I herolds sent
To claime my Kingdome at his hands, my right,
I had them, if hee were not so content,
To sound defiaunce, fyre, and sword, and fight :
But of my message hee esteemed light,
Hee brought an army strong, apointed was the day
Of battayle, then to try who beares the Crowne away.

26.

This when our mother sawe *Corwenna* wise,
That mortall warres wee wadge for Kingdome sake
Shee with her selfe did many wayes deuise,
A peace betweene her Martiall sonnes to make,
And with the Lords full oft did counsaile take,
Yet all in vaine : there could no parle of peace preuayle,
But on wee marcht agreed each other to assayle.

27.

The feeldes once pight and time of battaile comme,
In place where should bee tryde this quarell sad,
In armour eke the souldiers all and somme,
With all the force that might so soone bee had,

We captaynes vsing speach our men to glad,
 T'incourage them with promise proud of lasting fame :
 Tweene th'armies both *Corwenna* stood that noble dame.
 And thus shee spake :

28.

“ O out, ahlas ! my sonnes, what meanes this broyle ?
 Will you in feelde my tender bowels harme ?
 What furies force you thus t'unkindly toile ?
 What meane your men for slaughter here to swarme ?
 Did not this wombe once both inclose you warme ?
 And cannot now all *Britayne* hold you brethren twaine ;
 But needes by one of you his brother must bee slaine ?

29.

“ Cannot the feare of *Ioue's* immortall hate,
 Your mother's teares, nor woefull wailings moue ?
 Nor naked brests you suckte your malice slacke ?
 Nor cause t'imbrace the sacred lore of loue ?
 O euerlasting *Ioue* that liu'st aboue !
 Then I protest ere you doe fight the feelde this day,
 You shall in field (vngratefull sonnes) your woefull mother slay.

30.

“ Betweene you both you shall bereaue my life,
 What woes (my sonnes) aliue shall I sustaine,
 When I shall after this ambitious strife,
 So many see of both your subiects slaine,
 And you with brothers bloud your swords distayne,
 I shall (I say) in th'end of fight take woefull vewe,
 Of that my sonne, which this my sonne his [noble] brother slewe.

31.

“ O rather now, my sonnes, leaue of to iar,
 Lay weapons both aside take truce a while,
 If you doe loue to spend your time in war,
 Destroy not here at home your natie Ile,
 The present cause and quarell is to vile,

Joyne friendly both your armies fayth, and firme the same
To take some conquest great in hand of [euer]lasting fame.

32.

“ Therein you may with greater honour deale,
By this defame you shall¹⁰ your selves for aye:
Thereby you may enlarge your publique weale,
By this your selues and it shall quite decay:
Thereby you shall mine age with honour stay,
Thereby you shal [in warres] most like your noble father bee,
Which ere he wan^t the crowne did conquere [Kings and] king-
doms three.

33.

“ Once for my sake then ioyne yet handes agayne,
Let mee enioy once both before I die,
I would to see you frends my sonnes bee faine,
And hope I haue you will not this denie,
I aske a thing shall neuer hurte perdy,
For if you now surcease [embrace,] and loue as brethren well,
Then all the world of this your [peace and] concord aye shall
tell.”

34.

And turneing then to mee, thus wise shee sayd:
“ Thou knowst, my sonne, how twice thou hast bene foylde,
Thou twice to scape with life wast well apayde,
And since full farre to cuntryes straunge hast toyld:
If now thou shouldst of life and all bee spoilde,
(When liue thou maiste in Princely sort with peerelesse ioy)
What tong can tell thy mother's grieve and great anoy.

35.

“ I heare thou hast in *Fraunce* a Dukedome good,
Of subiects good thou hast an armie here,
Thou hast a wife that came of noble blood,

¹⁰ By this you shall defame. N.

^t Wore. N.

Thou need'st at home no foes at all to feare:
 What mean'st thou then such mortall hate to beare
 Against my sonne, thy brother here, which gaue to thee
 His kingdome halfe, the noble land of *Albany*?

36.

“ Sith thine ambition first procur'd the strife,
 Which didst in armour rise against thy King,
 Against thy brother lou'd thee more then life
 Thou didst thy subiects his against him bring,
 Think'st thou it was a wise or worthie thing?
 If not, thou hast good cause thy treason all confesse,
 And though he draue thee out therefore, to loue him ne're the lesse.

37.

“ Thou shalt therefore submitte thy selfe to mee,
 And take a truce a peace I will conclude,
 Thy brother eke shall so contented bee,
 No quarels olde shall be againe renewde,
 These broiles haue oft my cheeks with teares bedewde,
 My heart is rent, my hope bereau'd, my ioyes are gone,
 My life is lost if you conioyne not [frendships] both in one.”

38.

Then turning vnto *Belinus* she spake:
 “ My noble sonne (quoth shee) thou twice hast quaylde
 Thy brother's power, and mad'st him twice forsake
 His natie land, which I haue oft bewaylde:
 What though thou haue so oft before preuaylde,
 Think'st thou againe the thirde time eke to winne the feelde?
 Or art thou sure to slay my sonne, or force thy foes to yeelde.²

39.

“ What glory canst thou get thereby in th'end?
 Will not the worlde of your foule slaughters tell?
 Will not they all that liue, still discommend

² Or force him yeeld.

The man that did his owne deare brother quell?
Mempricius shamefull actes are knowne too well,
 And *Porrex*, *Britayns* both their noble brethren slew,
 Confounded [shortly] after both examples good for you.

40.

“ Nowe further this againe to both I say,
 Doe not you rue these noble souldiers good?
 Doe not you see how many you shall slay?
 Haue you no care to shed their guiltlesse blood?
 The state of tyraunts neuer stable stode,
 By bloudshed they doe founde, bace, builde, and prop their state,
 Raigne, liue and dye despise, and heape themselues eternall
 hate.³

41.

“ You noble men, in brieft I speake to you,
 And vnto all the Captains of your bands,
 And eke to all you souldiers good and true,
 Which haue the sway of bloudshed in your hands:
 Consider well the state of both our lands:
 You shall decrease your force, by ciuile discord, warres and strife,
 Distaine your blods, defame your selues, and reauē *Cornwenna's*
 life.⁴

42.

“ Then if that eyther *Ioues* immortall ire,
 (Which euer hated slaughters such as these)
 Or feare of *Plutoe's* euerlasting fire,
 Or daungers threatned both by land and seas,
 Or mother's minde (which both you ought to please)
 Or countries loue, or sacred peace (which al are bound t'imbrace)
 May ought perswade, let my requests among you all haue place.⁵

³ By bloodshed they do build and prop their tottering state,
 Raigne, liue and die despise, in never dying hate. N.

⁴ ————— your force, by discord and by strife,
 Distaine your bloods and reauē *Corwenna's* of her life. N.

⁵ Then let my iust request haue place. N.

43.

“ If not, loe here my naked breast, (quoth shee) /
 Which once you both did sucke in tender age,
 Let both your swords in these first bathed bee,
 Perhaps this slaughter shall your thirsts aswage :
 It shall be counted euen as small outrage
 To slay your mother pleading for your peace,
 As wadge the wars which gods and men and nature wils to cease.”⁶

44.

Much more she sayde which were too long to tell :
 And proffered foorth to swordes her naked brest,
 But when wee both considered had full well
 Her woefull teares, her wise and graue request,
 They so to peace our hautie hearts addrest,
 We layde our weapons downe : we met, imbrac’st and kist,
 More ioy in both the armies was then erst in wars I wist.⁷

45.

We ioyned hands, our captaynes did the like,
 And eke the souldiers linked all in loue,
 There was not one that did our truce mislike,
 Our peace did all to ioy and maruaile moue,
 With many triumphes feates of armes we proue,
 Our subiects all reioyce, in songs we sound *Cornewenna’s* prayse,
 Her fame to skies aloft with many showtes and cryes they rayse.

46.

The *Galles* and *Senons* then supposing me
 In *Britayne* from my Dukedome hard at fight,
 Thought great occasion offred them to be,
 And set themselues in armes and order right :
 My subiects eke of *Sauoy* day and night
 They did entice, perswade, sollicite and constrayne,
 To chuse another Duke at home with them to raigne.

⁶ ————— Pleading for a righteous peace
 Aswage the warres which gods commands you to surcease. N.

⁷ ————— We met, and did imbrace,
 All warre was set aside and ladie peace tooke place. N.

47.

Whereof when I heard tell in *Britayne* Isle,
Eke when my brother *Beline* thereof knewe,
We layde aside our sports and playes a while,
And of our souldiers tooke a muster newe :
Of both our hoasts we chose a noble crewe :

We past the seas, as brethren ought, in concord knit,
And both our force in one to conquere *Fraunce* we fit.

48.

Without resistance much we spoil'd the land
At th'entry in, and after many fights
We conquer'd all the Realme, my foes we fand,
Which were in armes stout, valiant, noble wights.
By sword they fell or flewe before our sights.

The *Germanis* force likewise that did them succour send,
We made to fall therefore and to our scepters bend.

49.

Three hundred thousand we in armour had,
An armie great renownde *Europa* through :
The Kings and Princes of our peace were glad,
We were in fight so puissant fearce and rough,
Munition, vitayles, money eke enough,

We had of tributes store, of dueties in that came,
Through all the world of *Brenne* and *Beline* flew the fame.

50.

To vs came souldiers out of many parts,
And captaynes worthy for the fame of warre,
Of fearce *Bellona* braue wee had the arts,
Whereof wee wanne the praise both neare and farre :
But not with this wee so contented arr,

As *Hercules* to scale the *Alpes* did first contend,
So wee agayne (a worke of toyle) the cloudy *Alpes* ascend.

51.

Great mountaynes, craggy, high, that touch the skies,
Full steepe to climbe vnto, and penshot all,

The Seas allow doe rore, and foggy vapours rise,
 And from the hills great streames of waters fall,
 The pathes so stricke to passe the speede is small :⁸
 The ise, snowe, cold, clouds, rombling stormes, and sights aboue,
 Are able constant harts with doubtfull feare to moue.

52.

For as you goe sometimes y'ar fayne to reach,
 And hang by handes, to wend aloft the way,
 And then on buttockes downe an other breatch,
 With elbowes and with heeles your selfe to stay,
 Downe vnder well behold the streames you may,
 And waters wilde which from the mountaynes faling flow :
 Ore head the rockes hang down whence riuers rore of melting
 snow.⁹

53.

When wee these *Alpes* had past with daungers greate,
 To *Clusium* towne in *Tuscan* land wee came :
 They, as wee did prouide our forage vitayles meate,¹
 Did issue out [in armes] to intercept the same :
 Ambassage to the *Romaines* eke they frame,
 Desiring aide against the *Galles* (so vs they counted theere)
 Because I was of *Fraunce* and *Frenchmen* in our armies were.²

54.

The *Romaines* then, because that our successe
 Reported was to them in warres before,
 Euen for their owne safegard could doe no lesse,
 But aide their neighbours now at neede the more :
 To parle they sent for peace ambassadours therefore,

⁸ The craggie mountaines that do touch the skies,
 With aged heads are euer white with snow,
 The seas allow doe rore, whence vapours rise,
 And from the hilles great streames of waters floe,
 The pathes so strict to passe which few do goe. N.

⁹ Hang threatning death to them below. N.

¹ The Tuscans as we droue our heards of neat. N.

² Frenchmen with vs were. N.

Wee aunswerde wee desirde but space wherein to [bide and]
dwell,

Because our peopled Countrie could not now contayne vs well.³

55.

But they forgetting quite of armes the lawe

Did arme them selues, ambassadours full stoute,

With *Clusians* came to bring vs all in awe,

Without respect of any further doute :

Whereon the seige from *Clusium* walles aboute

Wee raysed strayght, in speede alarme at *Rome* wee cry,

There to reuenge th'ambassadours outrage and iniury.⁴

56.

Yet first wee thought it best ambassage send,

To haue truce breakers such deliuered vs,

By lawe of armes as ought no weapons wend,

And yet against the lawes came armed thus :

They sayd wee were a people barbarous,

They neither punishe would nor yeeld those *Romaines* good,

But honour them, they came of *Fabius* noble bloud.

57.

Full swiftly on wee marched then in haste,

And towards *Rome* with all our powre wee hyde :

At *Alia* floud gan forty thousand taste

Of *Romaines* that vs met what might betyde :

Wee slewe them fast, the rest durst not abide,

Wee had the spoyle, to *Rome* wee came, the Citye wee possesse:⁵

A thousand waight of gold [wee make] the *Romaines* pay⁶ for
peace.

58.

Pannonia eke with broiles of warres wee tame,

And many yeares wee kept them vnder yoke,

³ Could not hold vs well. N.

⁴ We raised straight, at Rome we founded loud alarmes,
To wreake reuenge for breach done gainst the law of armes. N.

⁵ We came, which we possesse. N.

⁶ Paid. N.

The Princes all about that herde our noble fame
Desired peace with vs, before wee came to stroke:⁷

Wee *Britaynes* made *Europa* all to smoke:

To part our armies then in twayne wee tooke [at all] no doubte,
And seuerall conquests tooke in hand as [valiaunt] captaines
stoute.

59.

To *Macedony Beline* tooke the way,
Where raigned *Ptolome* the tyraunt fell,
Which did his sisters sonnes vniustly slay
Before their mother's face, and her expell,
Arsinoe, that vsde him earst so well,

Yea, though before the Gods⁸ hee sware to take her to his wife,
And loue her sonnes, [hee her expeld,] and them⁹ bereft of life.

60.

Euen so that wicked king at first refusde
To purchase peace with price, or hostage sende,
That had before the fayth of Gods abusde,
Was destinate to haue a naughty ende:

Let Princes well beware what they pretende,

For who for kingdomes sake breakes fayth, and murders foule
commits,¹

Let him bee² sure to [haue a] fall on slipery throne hee sits.

61.

Our custome was that time to send each where
Our Herouldes offering peace for tribute golde,
But *Ptolome* to *Beline* bad him message beare,
Conditions take of peace ne tribute³ pay hee woulde,
Ne frendship would admit ⁴ (as hee the herouldes tolde)

⁷ Desired peace not daring vs prouoke. N.

⁸ Though by the gods. N. ⁹ And here he them. N.

¹ Who for a crowne breakes faith, and murders foule commits. N.

² He will be. N.

³ But from King Ptolomie these newes we heare,
No peace he crau'd, no tribute. N.

⁴ Ne frendship crau'd. N.

Except the enmies layde downe weapons, them submit,
No truce with them, no peace there were, nor no agreement fit.⁵

62.

King *Beline* smilde to heare the heedelesse King,
Rash witted so selfe wild, and after this
The *Dardanes* offered twenty thousand bring
Of souldiers armde for ayde, to ioyne with his :
Quoth *Ptolome*, now lost⁶ all *Macedony* is,
Yf we once conquerde [all the East] by *Alexander's* hande,
Neede we the *Dardanes* ayde these straungers to withstande ?

63.

Wee haue (quoth hee) some souldiers, sonnes of those
Which serude in pay with them that vanquisht all,
And for our selues wee nothing feare our foes,
Although our army seeme to *Dardane* smalle :
This when th'ambassadors related all
To good king *Dardane* : Then this noble realme (quoth hee)
By this yong princ Cox pryde will all be lost and conquerde bee.⁷

64.

With that alarme they crye, and armies ioyne,
Where *Britaynes* sley the *Macedonian* crewe,
And haue for spoyle theyr vitayles, armour, coyne,
Tooke *Ptolomey* theyr king and him they slewe.
His heade aboue the campe they beare for vewe
On speare, to make the rest of *Greekes* in doubt to stand,
Before they enterprice to take such [woefull] wars in hand.

65.

One this the fame of *Britaynes* far was spred,
All *Macedony* held theyr countrey spoylde
To *Alexander* (erst theyr armies led)

⁵ Except our weapons laid adowne we should submit,
No arguments of peace he would admit. N.

⁶ Quoth he, *not* lost. N.

⁷ Will all dispoiled bee. N.

And vnto *Philip*, Princes neuer foylde,
 As vnto Gods they cry in warres tormoylde :
 O helpe (quoth they) our cuntry falls, and we are [all] vn-
 donne,
 Without your aydes whose noble actes erst all the world haue
 won.⁸

66.

But *Sosthenes*, a worthy *Macedonian* stoute,
 When as the *Britaynes* bathed in theyr blisse,
 Gate vnto him a warlike worthy route
 And set agayne on *Beline* there; and his
 Put him to foyle, for all his worthynes
 Wheron when as the souldiers would haue made him all theyr
 roye :

By captaynes name hee tooke theyr oth theyr ennies to distroye.⁹

67.

When this in *Greece* I herde, and theyr successe,
 First of the feelde they wonne, and folly then
 Enrichte with spoyles, giuen all to idlenes
 Which were before approued valiaunt men :
 I sounde retracte and backwardes gate agen,
 With seuen score and ten thousand footemen for the fight,
 And fiteene thousand horsemen good of manhooe and of might.¹

68.

With these apoynted well my frends to ayde
 The *Britaynes* good, and *Beline* in that case,
 To *Macedone* I marcht, with souldiers well apayde,
 Both for my brother's sake and riches of the place :
 Whereto when as wee came, in litle space

⁸ Without your powerful aides, whose actes the world haue won. N.

⁹ For which the souldiers all did chuse him for their king,
 But them as captaine he against their foes would bring. N.

¹ Horse, which made a goodly sight. N.

We wan the feelde, we tooke the spoyles of all the land at will,²
In pleasures plungde we had of wealth, [renowne,] and fame,
our fill.³

69.

So I that had all *Macedoyne* in awe,
With spoyle of mortall men was not content,
I past not of these conquests all a strawe,
The temples of the gods to spoile I ment,
And towards *Delphos* with mine army went :

Whereas on hyghe the temple⁴ stode most glorious to beholde,
And god *Apollo's* shrine enrichte with mighty masse of gold.⁵

70.

The riche and welthy gods (quoth I) may lende
To mortall men some of theyr treasures great,
They haue no neede thereof for to dispende
For clothing, vitayles, armour, drinke or meate :⁶
But yet wee must therefore theyr priests intreate,

² We wan the felde in fight, we spoild the land at will. N.

³ After this battle Beline must be presumed to haue returned to his native land, and many are the notable deeds which he reputedly effected for the weal of Britain. He, "both in ciuile iustice and also religion, as at that time was vsed, encreased his realm, constituting thre Archflamins, whose seas wer at London, York, and Carleon : He finished the foure great waies begun by his father : [Viz. Watling-street, Ikenild-street, the Fosse, and Ermin-street, thus referred to in Camden's *Britannia* : 'Some imagine that these ways were made by one MULMURIUS, God knows who, many ages before the birth of Christ : but this is so far from finding credit with me that I positively affirm, they were made from time to time by the Romans !' To return : he] subdued and made tributarie vnto him Denmark. In London he made the hauen which at this day reteineth the name of him, called Belines-gate : and as master Leiland writeth (whose labour and industrie, in most diligent serchyng out the antiquities of this realm, is greatly to be commended) builded the tower of London. He married his daughter Cambra vnto a prince of Almain called Antenor, of whom those people were called Cimbri and Sycambri. Finally after he had reigned with his brother and alone 26 yeres he died, and after the pagan maner with great pompe was burned." *Lanquet*.

⁴ On high his temple. N.

⁵ With gifts of gold. N.

⁶ Brenne ouercame the Macedones with their Duke Sosteme, and after spoyled their goddes and their temples, and sayde in myrth, riche Goddes must geue to men some of their riches." *Grafton*.

There is enough for them, [and vs,] and many moe beside,
Of offerings greate from Princes brought of all the world so wide.⁷

71.

This *Delphos* is on mount *Parnasus* fayre,
In *Greece*, wel fenst with rising rockes about,
By nature plaest aloft in pleasaunt ayre,
So high to scale they neede no enemies doubt,⁸
No watch, no warde they keepe the walles about :
So strong steepe pendent are the rockes whereon it [stately] stands,
As not the like could euer yet be made⁹ with mortall hands.

72.

When in this city shoutes aloude they make,
Or when the trompets sounde therein is herde,
The *Ecchoes* shrill so cause the skies to shake,
That straungers staring stand and muse afferde :
The wordes and tunes resounde agayne so harde,
So often times aboute from euery rocke so playne,
As if to one that cryde a thousand cryde¹ to him agayne.

73.

This made the men that came from farre to maze,
To maruayle much, to feare and wonder still,
And at the syte thereof to stare and gaze,
Deuising ofte the stately high and mighty hill,
A building founded first by heauenly skill,
In citye [fayrely] builde and costly grande with worke of hande,
Apolloe's temple highe [to heauen] aboue the rest doth stande.

74.

'Tis rownde theater wise so braue within,
And large aloft without, pendant vpright,
So high it seemes impossible to winne,
With comely forme the gazers to delight,

⁷ Brought both far and wide. N.

⁸ No foes to doubt. N.

⁹ Could since be made. N.

¹ One that cride, one cride. N.

The maiesty whereof [(I weene)] did them inuite
 That chose that seate, to dedicate a temple² in the same,
 Whereof for Oracles was spred through all the world the fame.³

75.

Amidste the height of this *Parnasus* mount,
 A turning wey there is, and in the playne
 A denne through rockes for deepenesse doth surmount,
 And turning vaults far in, whence aunsweres vayne
 The priests receiue from sprits to tell agayne
 When any come for counsayle there of things to [come to] knowe :
 Th'insensate priests the aunsweres of deluding sprits doe showe.⁴

76.

Wherefore the Kings and peoples offerings brought,
 From all the world and coasts of nations far
 Which many gifts of gold and siluer wrought,
 The statueres of the Gods and iewells rich there wer.⁵
 To *Delphos* all they runne in any doubt which ar,⁶
 This was the madnesse tho⁷ that mortall men bewicht
 Whereby *Apolloe's* temple was and *Delphos* so inricht.⁸

77.

Low nowe [in fewe,] I tell at *Delphos* what I did,
 For towardses it as with my mates I went,
 Them bee of courage good and nothing feare I bid,⁹
 I told them, with the spoile,¹ them to reward I ment :
 But now I askte how they would giue consent
 The captaynes *Euridane* and *Thessalone* companions in the pray,²
 Where it were good [straight now] to scale, or else a while to
 stay.

² T'erect a temple. N.³ Was spread a wondrous fame. N.⁴ The answere of deluding sprites the priests do show. N.⁵ The gold of kings and iewels rich were there. N.⁶ Run that doubtfull are. N. ⁷ Then. N.⁸ Was with gold so inricht. N.⁹ Courage good nought feare I bid. N.¹ With *Delphos* spoile. N.² Stout *Euridane* and *Thessalone* I did assay. N.

78.

The Captaynes counsaile was alarme [at once] to call,
 Before the *Græcians* were prouided for defence,³
 And straight to scale with skill the mighty wall,
 Before the city knewe of our pretence:
 The souldiers stout abroad encamped thence,
 And sayd they must refreshe their weried limmes a space,
 Vnable else to scale, or meete their enemyes in the face.⁴

79.

The *Græcians* them commaunde that dwelt by hip
 In villages, to make⁵ no spare of wine:
 The *Britayne* souldiers fell thereon to sip,
 Forgate their feats of warre and playd the swine,
 Against their captaynes eke they gan repine:
 So that full long it was or wee could them perswade
 To flye from *Bacchus* bouthes, and fall agayne to blade.

80.

Of souldiers thousands sixty fiae I had,
 But of our enemies fourteene⁶ thousand were
 The stately towne they see their harts to glad,
 I bad them not at all to stand in [doubt or] feare:
 Behold (quoth I) what doth in sight [aloft] appeare,
 Those charets glittering braue and statures stout in founded
 gold⁷
 Of sollid masse, more [weighty] riche then glorious to behold.

81.

For on the Temple stode a sort of golden⁸ shapes,
 And in the walles thereof their pictures shone,

³ Did prouide defence. N.⁴ Their foes in face. N.⁵ The Greekes in villages to make them trip
 Intreated them to make. N.⁶ Our foes scarce fourteene. N.⁷ Statüres all of gold. N.⁸ Stood faire golden. N.

Not one of these (quoth I) the *Britaynes* scapes,
 Wee souldiers shall possesse them euery one,
 Let vs therefore not linger here vpon,
 But geue th'assaulte for here in hand wee haue for spoiles a
 peece,⁹

In price of gold, [of perle] and gemmes surmounts the wealth of
*Greece.*¹

82.

Wee haue or this the wealth of men possest
 (Yet worthy Princes all) of mortall men,
 But here the treasures of the Gods are prest
 To looke for vs, shall wee refuse them then?
 Wee shall not so bee profered ofte agen

Within the walles hereof are greater [offerings] farre by odds,
 Th'attyre, crownes, scepters, statures, plate and garnish of the
 Gods.

83.

Wee sound Alarme th'assaute the rockes assayes,
 Our souldiers brainesicke heedelesse vp ascend,
 The *Delphos* men had fenste the easiest wayes,
 So that against the rockes our force wee bend:
 With stones the scaleing *Britaynes* downe they hend,
 An earthquake eke by vowes [and cries] the sacrificers reare,
 Which on my souldiers downe [to fall] a mighty rocke did
 teare.

84.

The ground did shake, and rent, and tempests rise,
 The haylestones mighty fall, the thunders rore
 The lightnings flasheing dazled all our eyes,
 The *Britaynes* from th'assaute were ouer bore,²
 My souldiers slayne discomfit mee before,

⁹ For here the God Apollœ's pride. N.

¹ Surmounts all Greece beside. N.

² Ouerborne. N.

And I sore wounded, foule amazde, orecome with [toile and]
smart,

T'escape the *Greekiske* sword [and shame] did perce my selfe to
th'harte.³

85.

You noble captaynes now that know my facts,
Learne valiauntly in warres the sword to wend,
Let fame extoll your wise and warlike acts,
And let report your fortitude commend:
But let your warfares haue a wiser end,
And let what *Bochas* writes and *Higgins* here doth pen,
As myrours shew what good⁴ wee gate, to warre with *Delphos*
men.

LENUOY.

1.

Great ruth that such a noble conqueroure,
Should haue so hard and infamous an end,
Which of the worlde might haue bene Emperour,

³ The principal events of this long life of Brennus are also recorded by Grafton and Harding, or may be found in the amusing and copious relation of Fabian. The supernatural discomfiture of his army and occasion of his death is thus related in the Polychronicon. "Este Brennius tourned agayn oute of the cest countrees: And este ouercome the Macedoyns and theyr duc Sosten, and spoyled goddes and temples and sayde meryly, that ryche goddes muste gyue men somewhat of her rychesse. Also he spoyled Appolyn Delphicus temple in the hylle mount Pernasus. There men of the countrey prayde helpe of her God, and sodaynly the erthe began to shake and a grete parte of the hylle felle vpon the hooste of Galles; and haylestones slough that other dele. The duc Brennius for sore of his woundes myght not endure, and therefore he slough himself with a sharpe swerde. No man shal wonder though Appolyn toke wreche of hem that spoyled the goddes and the temples: for God suffred Appolyn destroye many nacions by cause of theyr trespaas and euyl lyuyng and dedes. For it is certayn that spirites of the ayer may vse her shrewdnes in them that be mysbyleuyd and euyll of dedes: For grace is wythdrawe from suche maner men and euyl of spirytes haue leue graunted to noye them and to greue them."

⁴ Declare what good. N.

If all be true that storyes him commend :
But where is Fortune permanent a frend ?

Shee blyndely baytes and bathes her Impes in blisse,
Who trustes her still I count ill fortune his.

2.

Galerius and *Florianus* stoute,
And *Iulian* of *Rome* the Emperours,
And *Diocesiane* of *Constantine* in doubte,
Though in their times full worthy warriours,
So counted often noble conquerours,
They slewe themselues, abated from their blisse :
Which who so doth I count ill fortune his.

3.

Cordila slewe her selfe in prison pent,
And *Dido* for *Æneas* flight away,
That *Iudas* which betrayde the innocent,
And *Pontius Pilate* wrought their owne decay :
What neede I here on desperate captiues stayer ?
Sith who so bathes in flickering Fortune's blisse,
Without God's grace I count ill fortune his.

4.

The warres haue prosperde well with Princes oft,
Yet best with such who vertue sought alone,
The rest, which onely werde to wende aloft,
Were euer foylde confounded by their fone :
But here I cease, the next full woe begone,
With rented corps appeard deuoyde of blisse ;
Recounting thus that haplesse ende of his.

HOW KING KIMARVS

was deuoured by wilde beastes the

yeere before Christ

321.

1.

No place commendes the man vnworthie prayse.

No title of estate¹ doth stay vp vices fall,

No wicked wight to woe can make delayes,

No loftie lookes preserue the proud at all,

No brags or boast, no stature high and tall,

No lustie² youth, no swearing staring stout,

No brauery, banding, cogging, cutting out.

2.

Then what auayles to haue a Princely place,

A name of honour or an high degree,

To come by kinred of a noble race?

Except we princely, worthie, noble be!

The fruite declares the goodnes of the tree,

Do brag no more of birth or linage than,

For vertue,³ grace, and manners make the man.

3.

My selfe might bragge, and first of all begin,

Mulmucius made and constituted lawes,

And *Belinus* and *Brenne* his sonnes did win

Such prayse, their names to be immortall cause.⁴

Gurgunstus Readbeard with his sober sawes,

The sonne of *Beline* and my Grandsyre grand,

Was fortunate what ere he tooke in hand.

¹ No kingly state. N.

² Lofty. ed. 1575.

³ Sith vertue. ib.

⁴ Such praise that all the world giue them applause. N.

4.

His sonne my grandsire *Guintheline* did passe
 For vertue's praise, and *Martia* was his wife,
 A noble Queenethat wise and learned was,
 And gaue her selfe to study all her life,
 Deuising lawes, discust the ends of strife
 Amongst the *Britaynes* to her endlesse fame :
 Her statutes had of *Martian* lawes the name.⁵

5.

My father eke was sober, sage, and wise,
Cicilius hight, King *Guintheline* his sonne,
 Of noble Princes then my stocke did rise,
 And of a Prince of *Cornwall* first begonne :
 But what thereby of glory haue I wonne?
 Can this suffice to aunswere eke for mee,
 I came by parents of an high degree?

6.

Or shall I say, I was forsooth the King?⁶
 Then might I liue as lewdely as I lust,
 No sure, I cannot so auoide the sting
 Of shame that prickes such Princes are vniust.
 Wee rather should vnto our vertues trust,
 For vertue of the auncient bloud or kinne,
 Doth onely praise the parties shee's within.⁷

7.

And nobles onely borne (of this bee sure)
 Without the vertues of their noble race,
 Doe quite and cleane themselues thereby obscure,
 And their renowne and dignities deface :
 They doe their birth and linage all deface,

⁵ " Marcia was right connynge and conde many maner craftes, she made the lawe called Marcene lawe." *Polychronicon*.

⁶ Or shall I saye, Kimarus I was king. ed. 1575.

⁷ Praise the men that vertuous bin. N.

For why, in deede they euer ought so well
In vertues graue, as titles braue excell.

8.

But oft (God wot) they fare as erst did I,
They thinke if once they come of Princely stocke,
Then are they placed safe and sure, so hie
Aboue the rest, as founded on a rocke :

Of wise mens warnings all they make a mocke :

They counsayles graue as abiect reedes despise,
And count the braue men gracious, worthy, wise.

9.

This kingdome came to mee by due discent,
For why my father was before mee King,
But I to pleasure all and lust was bent,
I neuer reckte of Iustice any thing,

What purpose I did meane to passe to bring,*

That same t^r accomplish I with all my might
Endeuourde euer, were it wrong or right.

10.

I deemde the greatest ioyes in earthly hap,
I thought my pleasures euer would abide,
I seemde to sit in Lady Fortune's lap,

I reckte not all the world mee thought beside :

I did by lust my selfe and others guide,

Whereby the fates to worke my bane withall,

And cut mee of, thus wise procurde my fall.

11.

As I was alwayes bent to hunting still,

(Yet hunting was no vice to those I had)

When I three yeares had ruld this Realme at will,

In chace a chaunce did make my heart ful sad :

Wilde cruell beasts as desperate and mad

* Purpose I to passe did meane to bring. N.

Turnde backe on mee, as I them brought to bay,
And in their rage my sinfull corps did slay.⁹

12.

A iust reward for so vniust a life,
No worse a death then I deserued yore,
Such wrecks in th'end to wretches all are rife,
Who may and will not call for grace before :
My wilfull deedes were nought, what wilt thou more?
For wanton wildenesse, witlesse, hedelesse toyes
The brutishe beasts bereaude mee of my ioyes.¹⁰

LENUOY.

1.

By this appeares that time in *Britayne* were
Abondant store of wolues, and vices rife :
Mempricius tale the like doth witnesse beare,
And so doth *Madan's* mangled end of life :
These though they scaped stout *Bellonae's* knife,

⁹ Of Kimarus "there is nothing written, but that he was a wilde and wanton Prince, geuen to all pleasure and pastime, and reigned but thre yeres, beyng slain of his aduersaries as he was a hunting." *Grafton*.

¹⁰ THE AUTHOURE.

On this Kimarus left me all alone,
And so did Morpheus, then I thought to reste :
But yet againe he came presenting one,
For audience likewise making his requeste,
A worthy prince, he ware a warlike creste :
A blade in hande, he bloody rusty bore,
Was all his harnesse from his shoulders tore.
His armes and handes were all embrued in bloud,
So was his breste, but all the rest beside
Seemde rayde with matter vyle, or slimy mud,
With red and yelow as it were bedide :
You scarcely could the sight therof abide :
Yet sith he seemde some worthy wight to be,
It brought by farre lesse squemishnes to me.

Yet in the end for vices foule they fell
By Wolues deuourde, mine Author so doth tell.

2.

The glory vaine that fades and flits away,
Makes men so blinde, they looke not on the end :
Allurde to losse, on earthly pompe they stay,
But fewe to scale the vertue towres contend :
Fewe seeke, by Christ, the heauenly way to wend ;
The onely causes why these Princes fell,
Are vices vile, as auncient authors tell.

3.

Next after this, on stage a Prince appearde,
With slimye glere, and bloud beraide that came,
In hand a dagger drawne his foe that dearde
Hee bare perdy, and showde mee eke the same :
And thus his tale in order hee did frame
As shall ensue, so hee mee thought did tell
How hee was slaine, and slewe a monster fell.

HOW KING MORIN-

dus was deuoured by a monster, the
yeare before Christ,

303.

1.

LET mee likewise declare my facts and fall,
And eke recite what means this slimy glere!
You neede not faine so quaynte a looke at all,
Although I seeme so fulsome euery where:
This blade in bloudy hand, perdy, I beare,¹
And all his gore bemingled with this glue,
In witnes I my deadly enmy slewe.²

2.

Then marke my tale, beware of rashnes vile,
I am *Morindus* once was *Britayne* King,
On whom did sweetely³ Lady Fortune smile,
Till shee mee to her top of towres did bring;⁴
My fame both farre and neare shee made to ring,
And eke my praise exalted so to skye,
In all my time more famous none then I.

3.

Some say I was by birth a bastard bace,
Begotten of the Prince his concubine,
But what I was declared well my grace,
My fortitude and stature Princely mine.
My father eke that came of Princely lyne,
King *Danius* gaue not so bace degree,
Nor yet the noble *Britaynes* vnto mee.

¹ Which I do beare. N.

² I the dreadfull monster slew. N.

³ On whom long time did. N.

⁴ Till on her wheele's steepe top she did me bring. N.

4.

For feats of armes and warlike poynts I past,
 In courage stoute there liu'de not then my peere,
 I made them all that knewe my name agaste,
 And heard how great my enterprizes were,
 To shrink, and slinke, and shift aside for feare:
 All which at length did mee such glory bring,
 My father dead, the *Britaynes* made mee King.

5.

But see how blinde wee are, when Fortune smiles,
 How senceles wee when dignities increase,
 Wee euer vse our selues discretely whiles
 Wee litle haue, and loue to liue in peace:
 Smale fauters facts with mercy wee release:⁵
 Wee vse no rigoure, rancoure, rapine, such
 As after when wee haue our willes to much.

6.

For while that I a subiect was, no King,
 While I had nothing but my facts alone:
 I studied still in euery kinde of thing
 To serue my prince, and vnderfang his fone:
 To vse his subiects friendly euerychone,
 And for them all aduentures such to take,
 As might them all my person fauoure make.

7.

But when I once attained had the Crowne,
 I waxed cruell tyranous and fell,
 I had no longer minde of my renowne,
 I vsde my selfe to ill, the trueth to tell:
 O bace degree in happie case full well!
 Which art not puffed with pride, vaine glory, hate,
 But art beneath content to bide thy fate.

⁵ Subiected thoughts doth wicked pride suppresses. N.

8.

For I aloft, when once my heate was in,
 Not rain'd by reason ruled all by might,
 Ne prudence rekt, right, strength, or meane a pin,
 But with my friendes in anger all would fight,
 I strooke, kilde, slewe who euer were in sight,
 Without respect, remorse, reprove, regard,
 And like a madde man in my fury far'd,

9.

I deemde my might and fortitude was such,
 That I was able thereby conquere all,
 High kingdome's seate encreast my pompe so much,
 My pryde me thought impossible to fall:
 But God confoundes our proude deuices all,
 And brings that thing wherein we most doe trust,
 To our destruction by his iudgement iust.

10.

For when three yeares I ruled had this Ile,
 Without all rule as was my rulesse life,⁶
 The rumour ranne abroade within a while,
 And chiefly in the Norwest Countrey rife,
 A monster came from *Th'irish* seas, brought griefe
 To all my subiectes, in those coastes did dwell,
 Deuouring man and beast, a monster fell.

11.

Which when I knewe for trueth, I straight prepar'd
 In warlike wise my selfe to trye the case,
 My haste thereto a courage bold declar'd,
 For I alone would enter in the place:
 At which,⁷ with speare on horse I fet my race,
 But on his scales it enter could no more,
 Then might a bulrush on a brasen dore.

⁶ Without all law as was my lawlesse life. N.

⁷ Whom. ed. 1575.

12.

Agayne I prou'd yet, nought at all preuaylde,
 To breake my speare and not to pearce his syde :
 With that the roring monster me assaylde,
 So terrifide my horse I coulde not ride,
 Wherewith I lighted, and with sworde I tride
 By strokes and thrustes to finde some open in,
 But of my fight hee neuer past a pin.⁸

13.

And when I weried was and spent with fight,
 That kept my selfe with heede his daunger fro,
 As last almost ashamde I wanted might,
 And skil to worke the beastly monster wo,
 I gate me nerer with my sworde him to,
 And thought his flankes or vnder partes to wounde,
 Yf there for scales⁹ might any place bee founde.

14.

But frustrate of my purpose, finding none,
 And eke within his daunger entring quite,
 The grizely beast straight seasoned¹ mee vpon,
 And let his talauntes on my corpes to light,
 Hee gript my shoulders, not resist I might,
 And roaring with a greedy ranening looke,
 At once in iawes my body whole hee tooke.

15.

The way was large, and downe he drewe mee in,
 A monstrous paunche for rowmth, and wondrous wide,
 But (for I felt more softer there the skinne)
 At once I drewe a dagger by my side :
 I knewe my life no longer coulde abide,

⁸ By strokes to find a passage to his life,
 But now I found in vaine was all my strife. N.

⁹ From scales. ed. 1575.

¹ Seazed. N.

For rammish stench, bloude, poyson, slimy glere,
That in his body so abundant were.

16.

Wherefore I labouring to procure his death,
While first my dagger digde aboute his harte,
His force to cast mee welnigh drewe my breath,
But as hee felt within his woundes to smarte,
I ioyde to feele the mighty monster starte,
That roard, and belcht, and groande, and plungde, and cryde,
And tost mee vp and downe from syde to syde.

17.

Long so in panges hee plungde and panting lay,
And drewe his wynde so fast with such a powre,
That quite and cleane hee drewe my breath away,
Wee both were deade well nigh within an howre.
Lo thus one beastly monster did deuoure

An other monster moodeles to his² payne :
At once the realme was rid of monsters twayne.³

18.

Here mayst thou see of fortitude the hap,
Where prudence, iustice, temperaunce hath no place,
How sodaynly wee taken are in trap,
When wee dispise good vertues to embrace,
Intemperaunce doth all our deedes deface,
And letts vs heedeles headlong run so fast,
Wee seeke our owne destruction at the last.

² Vs. N.

³ This fable of the monster is repeated with little (if any) variation by most writers. "As he (Morindus) wente vppon a tyme by the see side, he mette a grete beste that was blak and horrible, and hidous: and wente that hit had bene a whale of the see: And bente an arweblaste and wolde haue slayn that beste with a quarell, but he myght nought smyte hit. And when he hade shote alle his quarell, the beste anone come to hym in grete haste, and him deuourede alyue, and so he deide." *M. S. Brute.*

19.

For hee that hath of fortitude and might,
 And thereto hath a kingdom ioynde withall,
 Except hee also guide him selfe aright,
 His powre and strength preuayleth him but small,
 Hee cannot scape at length an haples fall :

You may perceiue a myrrour playne by me,
 Which may with wisdom well sufficient bee.⁴

LENUOY.

1.

Wee reade the valiaunt actes of *Hercules*,
 His mighty labours all and woefull end,
 But *Samson's* conquests of his enemies,
 The holy histories to vs commend.
 Yet who so shal on fortitude depend,
 Still trusting to obtayne the victory,
 Let him beholde *Morindus'* history.

2.

Or of the death of *Theseus* they tell,
 The fall of *Brennus* and his woefull end,
 Though hee in force and powre bee nere so fell,
 Hee cannot still on fortitude depend :
 Tis vertue sole that all the wise commend :

⁴ ————— an haplesse falle,
 Or God's reuenge, example take by mee,
 And let my death sufficient warning bee. ed. 1575.

THE AUTHOURE.

I could not thus departe to take my reste,
 For Morpheus bad me byde and heare the last.

(Quoth he) behinde as yet, is one the beste:

“ Do stay a whyle, giue care till he be past,

“ And therewithall approtched one full fast,

The worthiest wight I euer erste did see :

These wordes he spake, or like it seemed mee.

Shee still obtaynes for aye the victory,
By true reporte of euery history.

3.

Strength, beauty, wealth, facts, fauoure, fearcenesse fell,
All earthly pleasures feele a paynefull end,
Then happy thrice is hee (the truth to tell)
That onely can on heauenly powre depend:
But now I must to you the next commend,
In blacke, mee thought, appearing mournefully,
Declaring thus his woefull misery.

HOW KING EMERIA-

nus for his tyranny was deposed, a-

bout the yeare before Christ,

235.¹

1.

THE wofull wight that fell from throne to thrall,
The wretch that woue the web wherein hee goes,
A dolefull blacke bad weede still weare hee shall
In woefull sorte, and nothing blame his foes:
What neede such one at all his name disclose?

Except the haplesse rest of *Britaynes* should,²
Not here for shame recite his name hee would,

2.

I am *Emeriane* King that raignde a space,
Scarce all one yeare,³ in *Britayne* Isle long sence,
But for I was in maners voide of grace,
Ferce, tyrannous, and full of negligence,
Bloud thirsty, cruell, vaine, deuoid of sence;
The *Britaynes* mee deposde, from seat and crowne,
And reaude mee quite of riches and renowne.

3.

I was despisde and banisht from my blisse,
Discountnaunste, fayne to hide my selfe for shame:
What neede I longer stand to tell thee this?
My selfe was for my woefull fall to blame:
My raygne was short, in fewe my fall I frame,
My life was lothsome, soone like death that found,
Let this suffice a warning blaste to sound.

¹ Not in the first edition.

² Except the rest of Britaine princes should. N.

³ The chronicles say six or seuen years, and deposed for his tyranny.

LENUOY.

1.

'The cause why here this Prince is briefe in talke
Is, for the stories scarce remembre such,
What neede I then with them more farder walke?
Sith this perhaps may seeme, is sayd to much,
I must but briefly these vnworthy tutch :

The next approaching pufte with dropsie wanne,
Thus wise, mee thought, his yexeing⁴ tale beganne.

⁴ To yex, to have the hiccough. *Johnson.*

HOW KING CHIRIN- *nus giuen to dronkennesse raygned but*

one yeare. Hee died about the yeare

before Christ,

137.¹

1.

THOUGH I my surfets haue not yet out slept,
Nor scarce with quiet browes begin my tale,
Let not my drousy talke bee ouer leapt,
For though my belching sent of wine or ale,
Although my face bee falloe, puft, and pale,
And legges with dropsy swell, and panche resound,
Yet let mee tell what vice did mee confound.

2.

Perhaps thou thinkste so groase a blockhead blunt,
A sleepy swinishe head can nothing say :
The greatest heads and smalest eke were wont
To beare in them the finest wits away :
This thing is true thou canst it not denay,
And *Bacchus* eke ensharps the wits of some :
Fæcundi calices quem non fecere disertum?

3.

Yet sith long since both braynes and all were spent,
And this in place amongst my mates I speake,
I trust thou wilt bee here withall content,
Although in deede my wits of talke are weake :
So old a vessayle cannot chuse but leake,
A drousy nole² that lyes on drinke a sleepe so long,
May pardon craue, although his tongue trip twifold wrong.³

¹ Not in the first edition.

² An unwilling dolt.

³ A drunken sot whose faltering feete do slip,
Must pardon craue, his tongue in talke will trip. N.

4.

Chirinnus was my name a Britayne King,
 But rulde short time, Sir *Bacchus* was my let :
*Erinnys*⁴ eke my sences so did swing,
 That reason could no seat amongst them get :
 Wherefore the truth I pray thee playnly set,
 I gaue my selfe to surfets swilling wine,
 And led my life much like a dronken swine.

5.

Deseases grewe, distempraunce made mee swell,
 My parched liuer lusted still for baste,
 My tympane sounded like a taber well,
 And nought but wine did like my greedy taste,
 This vice and moe my life and mee defaste,
 My face was blowne and blubd with dropsy wanne,
 And legges more like a monster then a man.

6.

So not in shape [and shewe] I onely altered was,
 My dispositions chaunged mee⁵ likewise,
 For vices make a man [a bull,] a goate, an asse,
 A swine or horse, (as Poets can comprise)
 Transforming into beasts by sundry wise
 Such men as keepe not onely shape of men,
 But them mishapeth also now and then.

7.

Wherefore let who so loues to liue long dayes
 Without deseases, strong in youthfull state,
 Beware of *Bacchus*' booth, which all betrayes,
 The vayle of vices vayne, the hauen of hate,
 The well of weake delightes, the brande of bate,
 By which I loste my health, life, realme and fame,

⁴ Erynnys, *i. e.* the goddesses that were to search into those men who had committed heinous offences: their names are Megæra, Tisiphone, and Alecto.

⁵ Chaung'd in me. N.

[My wealth, my crowne, my scepter, sheelde and name :]
And only wan the shrowding sheete of shame.

LENUOY.

1.

Of this bad vice who shall embrace the loue,
And not refraine him selfe there from by grace,
Let him bee sure it shall his sence remoue,
His beauty reauue, his facts and fame deface,
His wealth, strength, health, shall waste and were apace,
Hee cannot liue in health till hee bee olde,
Nor purchase health and sober fame againe with sowes⁶ of golde,

2.

The Poets painted *Bacchus* naked, bare,
Because hee doth all secrets deepe disclose,
In woemen's weede because men feebled are,
Effeminate them selues to wine dispose,
Like wanton childe likewise they faine hee goes,
As dronkerds wanton were though nere so olde,
Not wonne to sage and sober life with sowes of golde.

3.

But naked therefore I suppose hee's faynde,
Because hee makes men naked, poore, and bare :
By him they waste away the wealth they gaynde,
And plunge them selues in seas of woefull care,
Or naked then of vertues all they are,
When they to *Bacchus* bend, both yong and olde,
Not wonne to sage and sober life, with sowes of gold.

⁶ Sow, a great lump of melted iron or lead. *Bailey.*

4.

Who lones to liue a wise and godly life,
 Let him refuse such naked gods to serue:
 So shall he saue his fame auoyding strife,
 And right report of all good men deserue.
 But from my purpose lest I seeme to swerue:
 There next me thought a Prince I did behold
 Of vicious life, and thus his fates he did vnfold.

HOW KING VARIANVS

gaue himselfe to the lustes of the flesh,

and dyed about the yeare before Christ,

136.¹

1.

WHERE no good giftes haue place, nor beare the sway,
What are the men but wilful castaway?

Where gifts of grace doe garnish well the King,
There is no want, the land can lacke no thing :
The Court is stil well stor'd with noble [prudent] men,
In Townes and Cities Gouvernours are graue :

[The lands are tild,] the common wealth doth prosper² then,
And wealth at will the Prince and people haue.

2.

Perhaps you aske, what Prince is this appeares ?
What meanes his talke in these our golden yeares ?

A *Britayne* Prince that *Varianus* hight,
I helde some time the [crowne and] scepter here by right :
And though no neede there be in these your [golden] dayes
Of states to tell, or vertues good discriue,
Good counsayle yet may after stand³ in stead alwayes,
When time agayne may vices olde reuiue.

3.

If not : yet giue me leaue amongst the rest
Which felt the⁴ fall, or had their deaths addrest :
My cause of fall let me likewise declare,

¹ Not in the first edition.

² Also prosper. N.

³ Yet doth stand. N.

⁴ Their. N.

For falles the deathes of vicious Princes are :
 They fal, when all good men reioyce to heare or see
 That they short time enioyde their places hie,
 For Princes which for [princely] vertues prayed bee,
 By death arise extold, they scale the skie.

4.

I will be short because it may suffice
 That soone is sayde, to warne the sage and wise :
 Or if that they no warning neede to haue,
 This may perchaunce somewhat their labour saue
 With yonger heads, that will⁵ not heare their faultes them tolde,
 By such as would admonish them for loue :
 When they my words and warnings here [of vice] beholde,
 They may regarde and see their owne behoue.

5.

About my time the Princes liu'de not long,
 For all were giuen almost to vice and wrong :
 My selfe voluptuous was abandond quite,
 To take in fleshly lust my whole delite :
 A pleasure vile, that drawes a man from [all good] thrifte and grace,
 Doth iust desires, and heauenly thoughtes expell :
 Decayes the corps,⁶ defiles the soule, [the factes] and fame deface,
 And bringes him downe to *Plutoe's* paynes of hell.

6.

For this my sinne my subiectes hated mee,
 Repining still my stayned life to see :
 As when the Prince is wholly giuen to vice,
 And holdes the lewder sort in greatest price,
 The land decayes, disorder [sprouts and] springes abroad,
 The worser sort do robbe, pille, polle, and spoyle,
 The weaker are constraynd to⁷ beare the greatest loade,
 And leese the goodes for which [full sore] they erst did toyle.

⁵ With those that will. N.⁶ Doth spoile the corps. N.⁷ Weaker force to. N.

7.

How can *Iehoua* iust abide the wrong?
 He will not suffer such haue scepter long.
 As he did strike for sinfull life my seate,
 And did me downe from royall kingdome beate,
 So hath be done for aye, examples⁷ are in stories rife,
 No wicked wight can gouerne long in rest :
 For eyther some [the like] bereaues him of his life,
 Or downe his throne and kingdome is deprest.

Bid Princes then and noble Peeres the like delights detest.

There is no way the [iudgement high and] wrath of *Ioue* to
 wrest.

LENUOY.

1.

What should I longer on such Princes stay,
 Whose factes vnworthie were to be enrolde :
 The cause why thence I make more speede away,
 Is for his sake, whose fame hath farre bene tolde,
 That noble *Nennius*' Duke, a captaine bolde,
 Of royall bloud, to Prince and countrey kinde,
 Whose fame a place aboue the skies shall finde.

2.

When he the feates of armes had learned well,
 And coulde encounter with the best aliue,
 Hee not to treason nor to falshode fell,
 Nor with his ciuill friendes at home to striue :
 But hence the landed *Romaynes* out to driue.
 Which sith he did, to Prince and countrey kinde,
 His fame a place aboue the skies shall finde.

⁷ The like examples. N:

3.

Eke sith the rest, as were their liues obscure,
Haue tolde their tales, but simply as you see :
To helpe my style, the *Muses* most demure,
For *Nennius*' sake, gaue greater grace to mee,
Or else I thinke, frend Reader, t'was for thee,
That when thou readst of *Nennius*' noble minde,
Thou maist be so to Prince and countrey kinde.

4.

I will no longer thee from reading stay,
But wish thee marke howe he exhorteth all :
Do learne by him for countrey's sake to fray,
In peace no broyles of warres at home to brall :
And thinke thou seest that noble captayne tall
Thus wise display his warlike noble minde,
Duke *Nennius*, so to Prince and countrey kinde.

4.

For when I had leuyed an armie to fight,
 I ioyned with *Pinnar*, my power to preuayle:
 And *Rudacke* of *Wales* came eke with his might,
Mulmucius Donwallo the King to assayle.
 Our purpose the Prince by prowes did quaile,
 Which came out of *Cornwall*, vs vanquisht in field,
 Our souldiers slayne, skard, taken, forced to yeelde.⁴

5.

O fortune I blame thee, my selfe more vnwise:
 Thou gau'st me a kingdome, and with life I it lost.
 My souldiers were slayne fast before⁵ mine owne eyes,
 Or forced to flie, yeelde, and smell of the rost.⁶
 I neede not of honour or dignitie boast,
 Or tell of my triumphes, or crake of my crowne:
 The vaunt of vsurpers is voyde of renowne.

LENUOY.

1.

A worlde it is to see the meaner sort
 Enhaunce themselues aboue their due degree:
 To sit aloft they deeme a noble sport,
 From whence they may the worlde and people see.
 But so they speede as their deseruings bee.
 Still triall telles, Iehoua tumbles downe
 Such subiectes false as dare assume the crowne.

2.

For if these Pagans proud so plagued were,
 Which tooke on them ambitiously the sway,
 Wil not th'almightie's Iustice soone appeare,

⁴ Our souldiers were slaughter'd, or forced to yeeld. N.

⁵ Were killed before. N.

⁶ Or forced to yeeld & abandon the coast. N.

When Christian men their Christian Kinges betray?

Yes: he (by whome all Princes raigne for aye)

Such subjectes smites, as dare assume the crowne,

And from the throne intruders tumbles downe.

3.

But now beholde and marke this story well,

Which next in order seemes his tale to frame,

With bleeding woundes in fieldes likewise that fell,

For so me thought in warlike sort he came,

The last of these that *Rudacke* had to name,

Declaring how *Bellona* strooke him downe,

Because he had vniustly caught the crowne.

HOWE KING RV-

dacke of Wales was slayn by Mul-

mucius Donwallo about the yeere

before Christ 441.¹

1.

RUDE are the reuelles royaltie that rape,
Restlesse the raygnes of rebels in the robe,
Reckles the rage where cruelty doth scrape,
Roundnesse regarded² but little of the globe,
No man ambitious prudent with the probe,
Crownerape accounted but cunning and skill,
Bloudshead a blockehouse to beate away ill.

2.

The rudenesse of rebels reaching the crowne,
May be compared to *Bladhud's* devise:³
[But] better sit still than fall so farre downe,⁴
If Lordes coulde by others hurt learne to be wise.⁵
My selfe of [high] climbing haue payde well the price,
That rudely in throne myselfe did install
Aloft, not regarding how low I might fall.

3.

When *Britayne* was restlesse, wanting a Kyng,
(For *Forrex* and *Porrex* the Princes were slayne)⁶
The land many peeres ambitious did wring,
Endeuouring each the kingdome to gayne.
The heires good apparent forsake it were fayne,
The subiects were armed, wee nobles did striue,
At length we amongst vs deuision contriue.

¹ Not in the first edition.

² Esteem'd. N.

³ *Bladhud's* fond device. N.

⁴ Adowne N.

⁵ By my mishaps let other men be wise. N.

⁶ (For *Forrex* hight and *Porrex* both were slayne. N.)

4.

Then recklesse wee were when all was at rest,
 And each had a kingdome aloted his part :
 The vice of the subjects dayly increast,
 And justice and right were layd quite apart.
 The lawes ouerlashed by couine and craft,
 And wee that did gouerne did winke at this geare :
 The worser, perdy, our faythed frends were.⁷

5.

The ball that dame Fortune emparteth of blisse
 Is golden to gaze on, but voluble round :
 If once of your handfast in holding you misse,
 Away then it rolet, and you are on ground.
 Of watchers thereon so many abounde,
 And catchers thereat, with snatching therefore,
 That if once you leese it, you catch it no more.

6.

A Chirurgian that taketh a wounde for to cure,
 If skilfull and carefully hee sercheth it furst :
 The sea man doth sounde to take the depth sure,
 Ay wisdom well taught for feare of the worst.
 But our vile ambition, blinde, blockish, accurst,
 Not prouing the sore, nor reckoning the sounde,
 Our shippes and our science we sinke and confounde.

7.

Ambition out sercheth to glory the greece,
 The staire to estate, the grapple of grace :
 But in her is hidde of perill a peece,
 Which all our attempts doth dimme and deface.
 Perdy shee gets vs vaine ioyes⁸ but a space,
 Short, brittle as glasse : false fayre giueing light :
 Not golden, though glittering braue in the sight.

⁷ The worser thereby our faithfull friends were. N.

⁸ We do enioy her vaine ioyes. N.

8.

For when see hath brought vs vnto the throne,
 And Fortune hath fraught vs with honour at fill:
 Then there to sit stedy and rule all alone
 Wee racke our deuices, and scud with our scill.
 Wee cutt off occurrences, wee prole, pole, and pill:
 Wee bolster, wee band out, to brybe, banish, sley,
 The pillers of prudence that prop⁹ in our wey.

9.

Our race is then restles, our sleeping vnsounde:
 Our wakeing is warfare, our walkeing hath woe:
 Our talkeing is trustless, our cares doe abound:
 Our fauners deemde faythfull, and frendshippe a foe.
 Which troubles our fancies so tosse to and froe.
 That scarcely wee neuer inioy any rest
 Tormented, whome Fortune exalted and blest.

10.

This thing can I witnesse what troubles ensue,
 What cares doe vs compass enhaunced aloft:
 I therefore wish rebells to take better vewe
 Of the falles of intruders, recorded so oft.
 Who climeth so highe his fall is not soft.
 If once hee doe stagger or falter aside,
 Hee cannot recouer the rest for to guide.

11.

When I with my felowes (our selues which thought sure)¹
 Here ruled the realme, there fell out a flawe:
 Donwallo did seeke the Crowne to procure,
 Alleadging a title thereto by the lawe.
 He when him resisting in armes bright vs sawe,²
 Came strayght with an hoaste prepared to fight,
 With sworde for to trye out whose title was right,

⁹ Stand. N.

¹ When I who with others did thinke myselve sure. N.

² Who, when to field our power we did draw. N.

12.

Our numbre was great, our title vniust :
 Our consciences guilty, our souldiers agast :
 Our enmy with honour³ had souldiers of trust :
 And Fortune was frendly to them as they past.
 They slewe of our men by manhoo^d full fast,
 Or forst them to flye : In the feelde wee were fayne
 To resist⁴ them (poore Prynces) and so wee were slayne.

13.

First *Pinnar*, then *Stater*, I *Rudacke* likewise
 At last was with number oppressed dispatcht,
 Let Lordings beware how aloft they doe rise,
 [For] by Princes and commons theyr climbing is watcht.
 No sooner they haue at the scepter once snatcht,
 But guilty themselues they deeme worthy to die,
 And God's iustice such sentence [t'accomplish] doth hie.

LENUOY.

1.

You see the end of rebelles here descride,
 Entruders see whereto they haue to truste :
 Their seat vn^sure and slippery downe doth slide,
 Their names are eaten out with cankerd ruste.
 Theyr honours soone lay t^umb^ling in the duste.
 Wherefore I count them triple thrise and foure times blest,
 Which prudently to serue their God and Prince are prest.

2.

Sith stories all doe tell in euery age
 How these crowne croachers come to shamefull ends,
 And how they shortely winne the woefull wage,
 Which for vniustice *Ioua* iustely sends :

³ Donwallo with honour. N.⁴ Oppose. N.

Let hauty headstrong heede what hee pretends,
 Sith hee aliue, in death, and after's only blest,
 Which prudently to serue his God and Prince is prest.

3.

But now behold, from *Delphos* next in place
 A noble valiaunt *Britayne* there I vewde,
 Of stature tall, well sett, of comely grace,
 With body broysde, and armoure all embrewde.
 His wounded breast my woefull hart berewde:
 Whose life and death may proue contented wights are blest,
 Which prudently to serue their God and Prince are prest.

HOW THE NOBLE

King Brennus, after many triumphant

victories, at the seege of Delphos in

Greece slew him selfe, about the yeare before Christ,

375.¹

1.

AMONGST the noble martiall worthy men,
Renowned farre, victorious great of fame,
Though Autors sound my praise eftsoones agen
Emongst the *Britayne* Princes write the same:
I am that *Britayne* once that *Brennus* had to name,
My facts, exployts in warre, my conquests life and end,
Doe write as I recite, when time doth leasure lend.

2.

The mighty Monarche of this noble Ile
Mulmucius (conquerde tyranne Princes three
They by intrusion rayning here long while)²
Was father both to *Belinus* and mee.
His noble acts and lawes commended bee.
This *Belinus* (mine elder brother) was his heire,
And Queene *Cornwenna* was our mother wise and fayre.

3.

When after him my brother had the crowne,
Hee was content to make mee eke a king:
Hee gaue mee *Albany*, where with renowne
I rulde a while by lustice euery thing:
But at the last ambition made me bring
An army thence, agaynst my brother for to fight,
Which rather ought t'aue honorde him with homage right.

¹ Not inserted in the first edition.

² *Mulmucius* who with conquering blade did free
The Britans troubled state from tyrants vile. N.

4.

When *Belinus* perceiued mee approach
 Vnto his Realme, an army hee addrest:
 He warned me I should not seek t'incroatch
 That was not mine, for hee was ready prest
 Mee to repell: hee wilde mee bee at rest,
 I marched one, the armies met, wee fearcely fought,
 My souldiers slayne, to saue my selfe by flight I sought.

5.

To *Norwaye* then I fledde for succour hence,
 Where good *Elsingus* reignde the gentle King:
 I tolde him what I was, and eke of whence,
 Desirde his ayde, me home agayne to bring,
 And he not only graunted me this thing,
 But eke his daughter *Samye* fayre to be my wife,
 With me to passe in *Albany* for aye a Princely life.³

6.

But while we were prouiding ships and men,
 The fame abroad of my returne was spread,
 And *Guthlake* that was King of *Denmarke* then,
 Prouided with a nauie mee forlead:
 The loue of *Samye* so enragde his riual head,⁴
 That for her sake he must perforce my ships [and me] forlay,
 To win by fight or take by might the⁵ Lady faire away.

7.

And when our nauies mette, he wilde me yeelde
 This Lady straight, or else defend the cause:
 A thing (quoth I) requested erst but seelde,
 Against of Gods and men the sacred lawes:
 It hath not erst bene harde amongst the wise men's sawes,⁶

³ With me in Albany to leade a princely life. N.

⁴ His eie on Samye's beautie had so fed. N.

⁵ By force of armes to beare the. N.

⁶ Erst bene heard mongst wise men sawes. N.

That any King should clayme the like with sword of stormie strife,
Or make assaulte in warlike sorte to winne a Prince's wife.⁷

8.

From wordes to fight we fell on eyther side,
But in the ende I was discomfit there,
And yeelded⁸ her that listed scarce abide,
For she to him before did fauour beare:
By tempest then our nauies seuered were,
And he perforce by storme on shores of *Britayne* cast,
Was fayne for tribute hostage giue to *Beline* or he past.⁹

9.

At Seas turmoylde fīue dayes with raging winde,
Sore wearied with the fight, the foyle and losse,
And casting with my selfe in woefull minde,
The cause why so God *Neptune* did me tosse,
Why boyling Seas with surges so me sosse,¹
I made a vowe to kill the man that causde me flye,
Or with my bloud the kingdome all from him to buy.

10.

The Seas alayde, at last my ships I found
And rigde againe, at seas met of our foes²
Some³ wandring *Danes*, where we beset them round
In warlike sorte, we did them all inclose:
Euen so the wheele of Lady Fortune goes,
Abiects, castes downe, turnes topsie toruie quight,
The men of late extold with all her mayne and might.

11.

These ships my wants in some respect supplyde
With tacle, armour, vitayles and the rest

⁷ ————— the like by strife,
Or make assault by wrong to winne a Prince's wife. N.

⁸ But on his side the conquest did appear,
I yeelded her. N.

⁹ For tribute hostage gaue to *Beline* ere he past. N.

¹ And why false fortune my attempt did crosse. N.

² At seas we met our foes. N. ³ The. N.

And so to *Britayne* land apace I hyde,
 For kingdome lost to make againe request,
 Or else by might and force away to wrest
 The scepter from my brother *Beline*, and the crowne,
 Which lay that time by North at *Euerwyke* the towne.

12.

To lande I came, and did menace my brother sore,⁵
 But he an armie did with speede addresse,
 Which mette me straight at th'entry on the shore,
 Our battayles ioynd and fought with valiantnesse :
 But I was put in th'end to such distresse,
 To ships I flewe and tooke a fewe with me beside,
 And hoysing sayles for hap to *Gallia* strands I hyde.

13.

Ariued there, I trauayld long to see
 The nature of the Countrey and the men :
 And for my purpose I disposed mee,
 To please the Princes and the people then,
 In hope to see my countrey once agen,
 To winne my noble kingdome or to wreacke the wrong
 That I sustaynd, exile from natie soyle so long.

14.

When I had tolde the great mishaps I had
 Vnto the Peeres of *Fraunce*, some ayde to craue,
 I could obtaine no succour me to glad,
 Nor men, munition, ships, ne vitayles haue :
 I gate me thence to Duke *Seginus* graue,
 Of *Prouence* then the Prince renowned noble farre,
 For prudence prompt in peace and wisdom great in warre.

15.

This worthie Duke receiued me with ioy,
 (For of afflicted wights he had remorse)

⁵ And threatned *Beline* sore. N.

He hearde me oft declare the great anoy
 That I had felte, and of my brother's force :
 Howe *Guthlacke* did my wife and me diuorce,
 The broyles at Sea, the toyles I taken had at land,
 Which neuer coulde the face of Fortune's foyle withstand.

16.

Thou *Britayne* tall (quoth he) I rue thy fate,
 Thou noble Prince (for so thou art in showe)
 If I could now restore thee thine estate,
 Thou shouldst perceyue what fauour I thee owe ;
 'Tis Fortune's vse t'exalte and ouerthrow ;
 My counsaile then is this expect her grace a while,
 Till where she frownes she turne her frendly face and smile.

17.

So in his court he did me intertayne,
 Where long I liu'd and bare my selfe full well :
 Some times to play the captaine I was fayne,
 To winne some praise as causes did compell,
 For when his subiects eyther did rebell,
 Or confines made inroads to spoyle or pray his land,
 Then I was one that had the charge to take the warres in hand.⁶

18.

In armour fearce and stout, and strong was I,
 God *Mars* me gaue a stearne and stormie looke,
 With feates of armes by land or seas to trye,
 Experience taught me what I vndertooke :
 No payne, no toyle, nor daunger I forsooke,
 That might content the noble Duke of *Sauoy's* minde,
 Whose bountie me to honour him and serue his grace did bind.⁷

19.

In peacefull milde I was of comely grace,
 And wise in talke as time occasion gaue,

⁶ Then appointed was to take the warre in hand. N.

⁷ Whose bounteous grace for aye my loue to him did bind. N.

And (though I say't) I had a Princely face,
 I coulde both hunt and hawke, and court it braue :
 Eke Fortunes past had made me sage and graue,
 More heedy all attempts to prosecute with skill,
 Rash hastie men (by prooffe I found) incurre the greatest ill.⁸

20.

When Duke *Seginus* sawe my humble harte,
 A regall *Britayne* Prince, of royall bloude,
 How I employde my selfe and all my arte,
 Mine actiue feates with grace and prowes good,
 To serue and quayle his foes that him withstoode,
 He gaue his daughter rich to me, a peerles [princely] dame,
 His only heyre, and Dukedome⁹ after him to guide the same.

21.

By her (when hee was deade) I *Sauoye* had,
 A countrey fertile famous for the soyle ;
 With liberall giftes the souldiers hartes I glad,
 To winne the restes good will I tooke some toyle,
 By banquets, iewels, giftes, or warlike broyle :
 Stil vsing all the meanes t'obeysaunce them to moue,
 Eke all the wayes that might allure them me to loue.

22.

And settled so in honour greate at rest,
 Without the feare of forayne foes, or nye :
 I mused what for *Britayne* warres was best,
 Which way I might agayne my quarell trye :
 Such restles heades haue they that sitte on hye !
 O poore estate, how blest were thou that sitste below,
 How happy, safe and sure, if thou thy state couldst know

23.

A councill called for the same intent,
 I told the Lordes my purpose for the warre,

⁸ Rashnes (by prooffe I found) incurs the greatest ill. N.

⁹ With her his Dukedome. N.

How I to haue my kingdome here was bent,
They all agreed to levy nere and farre,
Such souldiers good and captaynes stoute that were,
They offered seruice eke themselues to fare with mee,
To winne the crowne by sworde or els reuenged bee.

24.

Concluding thus, a powre prouided was,
Munition good, and vitayles, shipping strong,
On voyage so with hoysed sayles wee passe,
Wee cut the seas and came apace along
To *Britayne* shores in hope to wrecke the wrong
That oft before was done, or winne the land agayne
Whence whilome twice I was to fly with daunger fayne.

25.

When wee were landed here, I herolds sent
To claime my Kingdome at his hands, my right,
I had them, if hee were not so content,
To sound defiaunce, fyre, and sword, and fight:
But of my message hee esteemed light,
Hee brought an army strong, apointed was the day
Of battayle, then to try who beares the Crowne away.

26.

This when our mother sawe *Corwenna* wise,
That mortall warres wee wadge for Kingdome sake
Shee with her selfe did many wayes deuise,
A peace betweene her Martiall sonnes to make,
And with the Lords full oft did counsaile take,
Yet all in vaine: there could no parle of peace preuayle,
But on wee marcht agreed each other to assayle.

27.

The feeldes once pight and time of battaile comme,
In place where should bee tryde this quarell sad,
In armour eke the souldiers all and somme,
With all the force that might so soone bee had,

We captaynes vsing speach our men to glad,
 T'incourage them with promise proud of lasting fame :
 Tweene th'armies both *Corwenna* stood that noble dame.
 And thus shee spake :

28.

“ O out, ahlas ! my sonnes, what meanes this broyle ?
 Will you in feelde my tender bowels harme ?
 What furies force you thus t'unkindly toile ?
 What meane your men for slaughter here to swarme ?
 Did not this wombe once both inclose you warme ?
 And cannot now all *Britayne* hold you brethren twaine ;
 But needes by one of you his brother must bee slaine ?

29.

“ Cannot the feare of *Ioue's* immortall hate,
 Your mother's teares, nor woefull wailings moue ?
 Nor naked brests you suckte your malice slacke ?
 Nor cause t'imbrace the sacred lore of loue ?
 O euerlasting *Ioue* that liu'st aboue !
 Then I protest ere you doe fight the feelde this day,
 You shall in field (vngratefull sonnes) your woefull mother slay.

30.

“ Betweene you both you shall bereaue my life,
 What woes (my sonnes) aliue shall I sustaine,
 When I shall after this ambitious strife,
 So many see of both your subiects slaine,
 And you with brothers bloud your swords distayne,
 I shall (I say) in th'end of fight take woefull vewe,
 Of that my sonne, which this my sonne his [noble] brother slewe.

31.

“ O rather now, my sonnes, leaue of to iar,
 Lay weapons both aside take truce a while,
 If you doe loue to spend your time in war,
 Destroy not here at home your natie Ile,
 The present cause and quarell is to vile,

Joyne friendly both your armies fayth, and firme the same
To take some conquest great in hand of [euer]lasting fame.

32.

“ Therein you may with greater honour deale,
By this defame you shall¹⁰ your selves for aye:
Thereby you may enlarge your publique weale,
By this your selues and it shall quite decay:
Thereby you shall mine age with honour stay,
Thereby you shal [in warres] most like your noble father bee,
Which ere he wan¹ the crowne did conquere [Kings and] king-
doms three.

33.

“ Once for my sake then ioyne yet handes agayne,
Let mee enioy once both before I die,
I would to see you frends my sonnes bee faine,
And hope I haue you will not this denie,
I aske a thing shall neuer hurte perdy,
For if you now surcease [embrace,] and loue as brethren well,
Then all the world of this your [peace and] concord aye shall
tell.”

34.

And turneing then to mee, thus wise shee sayd:
“ Thou knowst, my sonne, how twice thou hast bene foylde,
Thou twice to scape with life wast well apayde,
And since full farre to cuntryes straunge hast toyld:
If now thou shouldst of life and all bee spoilde,
(When liue thou maiste in Princely sort with peerelesse ioy)
What tong can tell thy mother's grieve and great anoy.

35.

“ I heare thou hast in *Fraunce* a Dukedooime good,
Of subiects good thou hast an armie here,
Thou hast a wife that came of noble blood,

¹⁰ By this you shall defame. N.

¹ Wore. N.

Thou need'st at home no foes at all to feare:
 What mean'st thou then such mortall hate to beare
 Against my sonne, thy brother here, which gaue to thee
 His kingdome halfe, the noble land of *Albany*?

36.

“ Sith thine ambition first procur'd the strife,
 Which didst in armour rise against thy King,
 Against thy brother lou'd thee more then life
 Thou didst thy subiects his against him bring,
 Think'st thou it was a wise or worthie thing?
 If not, thou hast good cause thy treason all confesse,
 And though he draue thee out therefore, to loue him ne're the lesse.

37.

“ Thou shalt therefore submitte thy selfe to mee,
 And take a truce a peace I will conclude,
 Thy brother eke shall so contented bee,
 No quarels olde shall be againe renewde,
 These broiles haue oft my cheeks with teares bedewde,
 My heart is rent, my hope bereau'd, my ioyes are gone,
 My life is lost if you conioyne not [frendships] both in one.”

38.

Then turning vnto *Belinus* she spake:

“ My noble sonne (quoth shee) thou twice hast quaylde
 Thy brother's power, and mad'st him twice forsake
 His natie land, which I haue oft bewaylde:
 What though thou haue so oft before preuaylde,
 Think'st thou againe the thirde time eke to winne the feelde?
 Or art thou sure to slay my sonne, or force thy foes to yeelde.²

39.

“ What glory canst thou get thereby in th'end?
 Will not the worlde of your foule slaughters tell?
 Will not they all that liue, still discommend

² Or force him yeeld.

The man that did his owne deare brother quell?
Mempricius shamefull actes are knowne too well,
 And *Porrex*, *Britayns* both their noble brethren slew,
 Confounded [shortly] after both examples good for you.

40.

“ Nowe further this againe to both I say,
 Doe not you rue these noble souldiers good?
 Doe not you see how many you shall slay?
 Haue you no care to shed their guiltlesse blood?
 The state of tyraunts neuer stable stode,
 By bloudshed they doe founde, bace, builde, and prop their state,
 Raigne, liue and dye despise, and heape themselues eternall
 hate.³

41.

“ You noble men, in brieft I speake to you,
 And vnto all the Captains of your bands,
 And eke to all you souldiers good and true,
 Which haue the sway of bloudshed in your hands:
 Consider well the state of both our lands:
 You shall decrease your force, by ciuile discord, warres and strife,
 Distaine your blods, defame your selues, and reauē *Cornwenna's*
 life.⁴

42.

“ Then if that eyther *Ioues* immortall ire,
 (Which euer hated slaughters such as these)
 Or feare of *Plutoe's* euerlasting fire,
 Or daungers threatned both by land and seas,
 Or mother's minde (which both you ought to please)
 Or countries loue, or sacred peace (which al are bound t'imbrace)
 May ought perswade, let my requests among you all haue place.⁵

³ By bloodshed they do build and prop their tottering state,
 Raigne, liue and die despise, in never dying hate. N.

⁴ ————— your force, by discord and by strife,
 Distaine your bloods and reauē *Corwenna's* of her life. N.

⁵ Then let my iust request haue place. N.

O

43.

“ If not, loe here my naked breast, (quoth shee) /
Which once you both did sucke in tender age,
Let both your swords in these first bathed bee,
Perhaps this slaughter shall your thirsts aswage :
It shall be counted euen as small outrage
To slay your mother pleading for your peace,
As wadge the wars which gods and men and nature wils to cease.”⁶

44.

Much more she sayde which were too long to tell :
And proffered foorth to swordes her naked brest,
But when wee both considered had full well
Her woefull teares, her wise and graue request,
They so to peace our hautie hearts addrest,
We layde our weapons downe : we met, imbrac’st and kist,
More ioy in both the armies was then erst in wars I wist.⁷

45.

We ioyned hands, our captaynes did the like,
And eke the souldiers linked all in loue,
There was not one that did our truce mislike,
Our peace did all to ioy and maruaile moue,
With many triumphes feates of armes we proue,
Our subiects all reioyce, in songs we sound *Cornewenna’s* prayse,
Her fame to skies aloft with many showtes and cryes they rayse.

46.

The *Galles* and *Senons* then supposing me
In *Britayne* from my Dukedome hard at fight,
Thought great occasion offred them to be,
And set themselues in armes and order right :
My subiects eke of *Sauoy* day and night
They did entice, perswade, sollicite and constrayne,
To chuse another Duke at home with them to raigne.

⁶ —————Pleading for a righteous peace
Aswage the warres which gods commands you to surcease. N.

⁷ —————We met, and did imbrace,
All warre was set aside and ladie peace tooke place. N.

47.

Whereof when I heard tell in *Britayne* Isle,
Eke when my brother *Beline* thereof knewe,
We layde aside our sports and playes a while,
And of our souldiers tooke a muster newe :
Of both our hoasts we chose a noble crewe :

We past the seas, as brethren ought, in concord knit,
And both our force in one to conquere *Fraunce* we fit.

48.

Without resistance much we spoil'd the land
At th'entry in, and after many fights
We conquer'd all the Realme, my foes we fand,
Which were in armes stout, valiant, noble wights.
By sword they fell or flewe before our sights.

The *Germanis* force likewise that did them succour send,
We made to fall therefore and to our scepters bend.

49.

Three hundred thousand we in armour had,
An armie great renownde *Europa* through :
The Kings and Princes of our peace were glad,
We were in fight so puissant fearce and rough,
Munition, vitayles, money eke enough,

We had of tributes store, of dueties in that came,
Through all the world of *Brenne* and *Beline* flew the fame.

50.

To vs came souldiers out of many parts,
And captaynes worthy for the fame of warre,
Of fearce *Bellona* braue wee had the arts,
Whereof wee wanne the praise both neare and farre :
But not with this wee so contented arr,

As *Hercules* to scale the *Alpes* did first contend,
So wee agayne (a worke of toyle) the cloudy *Alpes* ascend.

51.

Great mountaynes, craggy, high, that touch the skies,
Full steepe to climbe vnto, and penshot all,

The Seas allow doe rore, and foggy vapours rise,
 And from the hills great streames of waters fall,
 The pathes so stricke to passe the speede is small :⁸
 The ise, snowe, cold, clouds, rombling stormes, and sights aboue,
 Are able constant harts with doubtfull feare to moue.

52.

For as you goe sometimes y'ar fayne to reach,
 And hang by handes, to wend aloft the way,
 And then on buttockes downe an other breach,
 With elbowes and with heeles your selfe to stay,
 Downe vnder well behold the streames you may,
 And waters wilde which from the mountaynes faling flow :
 Ore head the rockes hang down whence riuers rore of melting
 snow.⁹

53.

When wee these *Alpes* had past with daungers greate,
 To *Clusium* towne in *Tuscane* land wee came :
 They, as wee did prouide our forage vitayles meate,¹
 Did issue out [in armes] to intercept the same :
 Ambassage to the *Romaines* eke they frame,
 Desiring aide against the *Galles* (so vs they counted there)
 Because I was of *Fraunce* and *Frenchmen* in our armies were.²

54.

The *Romaines* then, because that our successe
 Reported was to them in warres before,
 Euen for their owne safegard could doe no lesse,
 But aide their neighbours now at neede the more :
 To parle they sent for peace ambassadours therefore,

⁸ The craggie mountaines that do touch the skies,
 With aged heads are euer white with snow,
 The seas allow doe rore, whence vapours rise,
 And from the hilles great streames of waters floe,
 The pathes so strict to passe which few do goe. N.

⁹ Hang threatning death to them below. N.

¹ The Tuscans as we droue our heards of neat. N.

² Frenchmen with vs were. N.

Wee aunswerde wee desirde but space wherein to [bide and]
dwell,

Because our peopled Countrie could not now contayne vs well.³

55.

But they forgetting quite of armes the lawe

Did arme them selues, ambassadours full stoute,

With *Clusians* came to bring vs all in awe,

Without respect of any further doute:

Whereon the seige from *Clusium* walles aboute

Wee raysed strayght, in speede alarme at *Rome* wee cry,

There to reuenge th'ambassadours outrage and iniury.⁴

56.

Yet first wee thought it best ambassage send,

To haue truce breakers such deliuered vs,

By lawe of armes as ought no weapons wend,

And yet against the lawes came armed thus:

They sayd wee were a people barbarous,

They neither punishe would nor yeeld those *Romaines* good,

But honour them, they came of *Fabius* noble bloud.

57.

Full swiftly on wee marched then in haste,

And towardes *Rome* with all our powre wee hyde:

At *Alia* floud gan forty thousand taste

Of *Romaines* that vs met what might betyde:

Wee slewe them fast, the rest durst not abide,

Wee had the spoyle, to *Rome* wee came, the Citye wee possesse:⁵

A thousand waight of gold [wee make] the *Romaines* pay⁶ for
peace.

58.

Pannonia eke with broiles of warres wee tame,

And many yeares wee kept them vnder yoke,

³ Could not hold vs well. N.

⁴ We raised straight, at Rome we founded loud alarmes,
To wreake reuenge for breach done gainst the law of armes. N.

⁵ We came, which we possesse. N.

⁶ Paid. N.

The Princes all about that herde our noble fame
Desired peace with vs, before wee came to stroke:⁷

Wee *Britaynes* made *Europa* all to smoke:

To part our armies then in twayne wee tooke [at all] no doubt,
And seuerall conquests tooke in hand as [valiaunt] captaines
stoute.

59.

To *Macedony Beline* tooke the way,
Where raigned *Ptolome* the tyraunt fell,
Which did his sisters sonnes vniustly slay
Before their mother's face, and her expell,
Arsinoe, that vsde him earst so well,

Yea, though before the Gods⁸ hee sware to take her to his wife,
And loue her sonnes, [hee her expeld,] and them⁹ bereft of life.

60.

Euen so that wicked king at first refusde
To purchase peace with price, or hostage sende,
That had before the fayth of Gods abusde,
Was destinate to haue a naughty ende:

Let Princes well beware what they pretende,

For who for kingdomes sake breakes fayth, and murders foule
commits,¹

Let him bee² sure to [haue a] fall on slipery throne hee sits.

61.

Our custome was that time to send each where
Our Herouldes offering peace for tribute golde,
But *Ptolome* to *Beline* bad him message beare,
Conditions take of peace ne tribute³ pay hee woulde,
Ne frendship would admit ⁴ (as hee the herouldes tolde)

⁷ Desired peace not daring vs prouoke. N.

⁸ Though by the gods. N.

⁹ And here he them. N.

¹ Who for a crowne breakes faith, and murders foule commits. N.

² He will be. N.

³ But from King Ptolomie these newes we heare,
No peace he crau'd, no tribute. N.

⁴ Ne friendship crau'd. N.

Except the enemies layde downe weapons, them submit,
No truce with them, no peace there were, nor no agreement fit.⁵

62.

King *Beline* smilde to heare the heedelesse King,
Rash witted so selfe wild, and after this
The *Dardanes* offered twenty thousand bring
Of souldiers armde for ayde, to ioyne with his :
Quoth *Ptolome*, now lost⁶ all *Macedony* is,
Yf we once conquerde [all the East] by *Alexander's* hande,
Neede we the *Dardanes* ayde these straungers to withstande ?

63.

Wee haue (quoth hee) some souldiers, sonnes of those
Which serude in pay with them that vanquisht all,
And for our selues wee nothing feare our foes,
Although our army seeme to *Dardane* smalle :
This when th'ambassadors related all
To good king *Dardane* : Then this noble realme (quoth hee)
By this yong princ Cox pryde will all be lost and conquerde bee.⁷

64.

With that alarme they crye, and armies ioyne,
Where *Britaynes* sley the *Macedonian* crewe,
And haue for spoyle theyr vitayles, armour, coyne,
Tooke *Ptolomey* theyr king and him they slewe.
His heade aboue the campe they beare for vewe
On speare, to make the rest of *Greekes* in doubt to stand,
Before they enterprice to take such [woefull] wars in hand.

65.

One this the fame of *Britaynes* far was spred,
All *Macedony* held theyr countrey spoylede
To *Alexander* (erst theyr armies led)

⁵ Except our weapons laid adowne we should submit,
No arguments of peace he would admit. N.

⁶ Quoth he, *not* lost. N.

⁷ Will all dispoiled bee. N.

And vnto *Philip*, Princes neuer foylde,
 As vnto Gods they cry in warres tormoylde :
 O helpe (quoth they) our cuntry falls, and we are [all] vn-
 donne,
 Without your aydes whose noble actes erst all the world haue
 won.⁸

66.

But *Sosthenes*, a worthy *Macedonian* stoute,
 When as the *Britaynes* bathed in theyr blisse,
 Gate vnto him a warlike worthy route
 And set agayne on *Beline* there; and his
 Put him to foyle, for all his worthynes
 Wheron when as the souldiers would haue made him all theyr
 roye :

By captaynes name hee tooke theyr oth theyr enemies to distroye.⁹

67.

When this in *Greece* I herde, and theyr successe,
 First of the feelde they wonne, and folly then
 Enrichte with spoyles, giuen all to idlenes
 Which were before approued valiaunt men :
 I sounde retracte and backwardes gate agen,
 With seuen score and ten thousand footemen for the fight,
 And fiteene thousand horsemen good of manhooe and of might.¹

68.

With these apoynted well my frends to ayde
 The *Britaynes* good, and *Beline* in that case,
 To *Macedone* I marcht, with souldiers well apayde,
 Both for my brother's sake and riches of the place :
 Where to when as wee came, in litle space

⁸ Without your powerful aides, whose actes the world haue won. N.

⁹ For which the souldiers all did chuse him for their king,
 But them as captaine he against their foes would bring. N.

¹ Horse, which made a goodly sight. N.

We wan the feelde, we tooke the spoyles of all the land at will,²
 In pleasures plungde we had of wealth, [renowne,] and fame,
 our fill.³

69.

So I that had all *Macedoyne* in awe,
 With spoyle of mortall men was not content,
 I past not of these conquests all a strawe,
 The temples of the gods to spoile I ment,
 And towards *Delphos* with mine army went:

Whereas on hyghe the temple⁴ stode most glorious to beholde,
 And god *Apollo's* shrine enrichte with mighty masse of gold.⁵

70.

The riche and welthy gods (quoth I) may lende
 To mortall men some of theyr treasures great,
 They haue no neede thereof for to dispende
 For clothing, vitayles, armour, drinke or meate:⁶
 But yet wee must therefore theyr priests intreate,

² We wan the felde in fight, we spoild the land at will. N.

³ After this battle Beline must be presumed to haue returned to his native land, and many are the notable deeds which he reputedly effected for the weal of Britain. He, "both in ciuile iustice and also religion, as at that time was vsed, encreased his realm, constituting thre Archflamins, whose seas wer at London, York, and Carleon: He finished the foure great waies begun by his father: [Viz. Watling-street, Ikenild-street, the Fosse, and Ermin-street, thus referred to in Camden's *Britannia*: 'Some imagine that these ways were made by one MULMURIUS, God knows who, many ages before the birth of Christ: but this is so far from finding credit with me that I positively affirm, they were made from time to time by the Romans!' To return: he] subdued and made tributarie vnto him Denmark. In London he made the hauen which at this day reteineth the name of him, called Belines-gate: and as master Leiland writeth (whose labour and industrie, in most diligent serchyng out the antiquities of this realm, is greatly to be commended) builded the tower of London. He married his daughter Cambra vnto a prince of Almain called Antenor, of whom those people were called Cimbri and Sycambri. Finally after he had reigned with his brother and alone 26 yeres he died, and after the pagan maner with great pompe was burned." *Lanquet*.

⁴ On high his temple. N.

⁵ With gifts of gold. N.

⁶ Brenne ouercame the Macedones with their Duke Sosteme, and after spoyled their goddes and their temples, and sayde in myrth, riche Goddes must geue to men some of their riches." *Grafton*.

There is enough for them, [and vs,] and many moe beside,
Of offerings greate from Princes brought of all the world so wide.⁷

71.

This *Delphos* is on mount *Parnasus* fayre,
In *Greece*, wel fenst with rising rockes about,
By nature plaest aloft in pleasaunt ayre,
So high to scale they neede no enemies doubt,⁸
No watch, no warde they keepe the walles about :
So strong steepe pendent are the rockes whereon it [stately] stands,
As not the like could euer yet be made⁹ with mortall hands.

72.

When in this city shoutes aloude they make,
Or when the trompets sounde therein is herde,
The *Ecchoes* shrill so cause the skies to shake,
That straungers staring stand and muse afferde :
The wordes and tunes resounde agayne so harde,
So often times aboute from euery rocke so playne,
As if to one that cryde a thousand cryde¹ to him agayne.

73.

This made the men that came from farre to maze,
To maruayle much, to feare and wonder still,
And at the syte thereof to stare and gaze,
Deuising ofte the stately high and mighty hill,
A building founded first by heauenly skill,
In citye [fayrely] builde and costly grande with worke of hande,
Apolloe's temple highe [to heauen] aboue the rest doth stande.

74.

'Tis rownde theater wise so braue within,
And large aloft without, pendant vpright,
So high it seemes impossible to winne,
With comely forme the gazers to delight,

⁷ Brought both far and wide. N.

⁸ No foes to doubt. N.

⁹ Could since be made. N.

¹ One that cride, one cride. N.

The maiesty whereof [(I weene)] did them inuite
 That chose that seate, to dedicate a temple² in the same,
 Whereof for Oracles was spred through all the world the fame.³

75.

Amidste the height of this *Parnasus* mount,
 A turning wey there is, and in the playne
 A denne through rockes for deepenesse doth surmount,
 And turning vaults far in, whence aunsweres vayne
 The priests receiue from sprits to tell agayne
 When any come for counsaile there of things to [come to] knowe:
 Th'insensate priests the aunsweres of deluding sprits doe showe.⁴

76.

Wherefore the Kings and peoples offerings brought,
 From all the world and coasts of nations far
 Which many gifts of gold and siluer wrought,
 The statueres of the Gods and iewells rich there wer.⁵
 To *Delphos* all they runne in any doubt which ar,⁶
 This was the madnesse tho⁷ that mortall men bewicht
 Whereby *Apolloe's* temple was and *Delphos* so inricht.⁸

77.

Low nowe [in fewe,] I tell at *Delphos* what I did,
 For towards it as with my mates I went,
 Them bee of courage good and nothing feare I bid,⁹
 I told them, with the spoile,¹ them to reward I ment:
 But now I askte how they would giue consent
 The captaynes *Euridane* and *Thessalone* companions in the pray,²
 Where it were good [straight now] to scale, or else a while to
 stay.

² T'erect a temple. N.³ Was spread a wondrous fame. N.⁴ The answere of deluding sprites the priests do show. N.⁵ The gold of kings and iewels rich were there. N.⁶ Run that doubtfull are. N. ⁷ Then. N.⁸ Was with gold so inricht. N.⁹ Courage good nought feare I bid. N.¹ With *Delphos* spoile. N.² Stout *Euridane* and *Thessalone* I did assay. N.

78.

The Captaynes counsaile was alarme [at once] to call,
 Before the *Græcians* were prouided for defence,³
 And straight to scale with skill the mighty wall,
 Before the city knewe of our pretence:
 The souldiers stout abroad encamped thence,
 And sayd they must refreshe their weried limmes a space,
 Vnable else to scale, or meete their enmyes in the face.⁴

79.

The *Græcians* them commaunde that dwelt by hip
 In villages, to make⁵ no spare of wine:
 The *Britayne* souldiers fell thereon to sip,
 Forgate their feats of warre and playd the swine,
 Against their captaynes eke they gan repine:
 So that full long it was or wee could them perswade
 To flye from *Bacchus* bouthes, and fall agayne to blade.

80.

Of souldiers thousands sixty fiae I had,
 But of our enmies fourteene⁶ thousand were
 The stately towne they see their harts to glad,
 I bad them not at all to stand in [doubt or] feare:
 Behold (quoth I) what doth in sight [aloft] appeare,
 Those charets glittering braue and statures stout in founded
 gold⁷
 Of sollid masse, more [weighty] riche then glorious to behold,

81.

For on the Temple stoode a sort of golden⁸ shapes,
 And in the walles thereof their pictures shone,

³ Did prouide defence. N.⁴ Their foes in face. N.⁵ The Greekes in villages to make them trip
 Intreated them to make. N.⁶ Our foes scarce fourteene. N.⁷ Statüres all of gold. N.⁸ Stood faire golden. N.

Not one of these (quoth I) the *Britaynes* scapes,
 Wee souldiers shall possesse them euery one,
 Let vs therefore not linger here vpon,
 But geue th'assaulte for here in hand wee haue for spoiles a
 peece,⁹

In price of gold, [of perle] and gemmes surmounts the wealth of
*Greece.*¹

82.

Wee haue or this the wealth of men possest
 (Yet worthy Princes all) of mortall men,
 But here the treasures of the Gods are prest
 To looke for vs, shall wee refuse them then?
 Wee shall not so bee profered ofte agen

Within the walles hereof are greater [offerings] farre by odds,
 Th'attyre, crownes, scepters, statures, plate and garnish of the
 Gods.

83.

Wee sound Alarme th'assaute the rockes assayes,
 Our souldiers brainesicke heedelesse vp ascend,
 The *Delphos* men had fenste the easiest wayes,
 So that against the rockes our force wee bend:
 With stones the scaleing *Britaynes* downe they hend,
 An earthquake eke by vowes [and cries] the sacrificers reare,
 Which on my souldiers downe [to fall] a mighty rocke did
 teare.

84.

The ground did shake, and rent, and tempests rise,
 The haylestones mighty fall, the thunders rore
 The lightnings flasheing dazled all our eyes,
 The *Britaynes* from th'assaute were ouer bore,²
 My souldiers slayne discomfit mee before,

⁹ For here the God Apollœ's pride. N.

¹ Surmounts all Greece beside. N.

² Ouerborne. N.

And I sore wounded, foule amazde, orecome with [toile and]
 smart,
 T'escape the *Greekiske* sword [and shame] did perce my selfe to
 th'harte.³

85.

You noble captaynes now that know my facts,
 Learne valiauntly in warres the sword to wend,
 Let fame extoll your wise and warlike acts,
 And let report your fortitude commend:
 But let your warfares haue a wiser end,
 And let what *Bochas* writes and *Higgins* here doth pen,
 As myrours shew what good⁴ wee gate, to warre with *Delphos*
 men.

LENUOY.

1.

Great ruth that such a noble conqueroure,
 Should haue so hard and infamous an end,
 Which of the worlde might haue bene Emperour,

³ The principal events of this long life of Brennus are also recorded by Grafton and Harding, or may be found in the amusing and copious relation of Fabian. The supernatural discomfiture of his army and occasion of his death is thus related in the Polychronicon. "Este Brennius tourned agayn oute of the eest countrees: And este ouercome the Macedoyns and theyr duck Sosten, and spoyled goddes and temples and sayde meryly, that ryche goddes muste gyue men somewhat of her rychesse. Also he spoyled Appolyn Delphicus temple in the hylle mount Pernasus. There men of the countrey prayde helpe of her God, and sodaynly the erthe began to shake and a grete parte of the hylle felle vpon the hooste of Galles; and haylestones slough that other dele. The duc Brennius for sore of his woundes myght not endure, and therefore he slough himself with a sharpe swerde. No man shal wonder though Appolyn toke wreche of hem that spoyled the goddes and the temples: for God suffred Appolyn destroye many nacions by cause of theyr trespaas and euyl lyuyng and dedes. For it is certayn that spirites of the ayer may vse her shrewdnes in them that be mysbyleuyd and euyll of dedes: For grace is wythdrawe from suche maner men and euyl of spirytes haue leue graunted to noye them and to greue them."

⁴ Declare what good. N.

If all be true that storyes him commend :
 But where is Fortune permanent a frend ?
 Shee blyndely baytes and bathes her Impes in blisse,
 Who trustes her still I count ill fortune his.

2.

Galerius and *Florianus* stoute,
 And *Iulian* of *Rome* the Emperours,
 And *Diocesiane* of *Constantine* in doubte,
 Though in their times full worthy warriours,
 So counted often noble conquerours,
 They slewe themselues, abated from their blisse :
 Which who so doth I count ill fortune his.

3.

Cordila slewe her selfe in prison pent,
 And *Dido* for *Æneas* flight away,
 That *Iudas* which betrayde the innocent,
 And *Pontius Pilate* wrought their owne decay :
 What neede I here on desperate captiues stayer ?
 Sith who so bathes in flickering Fortune's blisse,
 Without God's grace I count ill fortune his.

4.

The warres haue prosperde well with Princes oft,
 Yet best with such who vertue sought alone,
 The rest, which onely werde to wende aloft,
 Were euer foylde confounded by their fone :
 But here I cease, the next full woe begone,
 With rented corps appeard deuoyde of blisse ;
 Recounting thus that haplesse ende of his.

HOW KING KIMARVS

was deuoured by wilde beastes the

yeere before Christ

321.

1.

No place commendes the man vnworthie prayse.

No title of estate¹ doth stay vp vices fall,

No wicked wight to woe can make delayes,

No loftie lookes preserue the proud at all,

No brags or boast, no stature high and tall,

No lustie² youth, no swearing staring stout,

No brauery, banding, cogging, cutting out.

2.

Then what auayles to haue a Princely place,

A name of honour or an high degree,

To come by kinred of a noble race?

Except we princely, worthie, noble be!

The fruite declares the goodnes of the tree,

Do brag no more of birth or lineage than,

For vertue,³ grace, and manners make the man.

3.

My selfe might bragge, and first of all begin,

Mulmucius made and constituted lawes,

And *Belinus* and *Brenne* his sonnes did win

Such prayse, their names to be immortall cause.⁴

Gurgunstus Readbeard with his sober sawes,

The sonne of *Beline* and my Grandsyre grand,

Was fortunate what ere he tooke in hand.

¹ No kingly state. N.

² Lofty. ed. 1575.

³ Sith vertue. ib.

⁴ Such praise that all the world giue them applause. N.

4.

His sonne my grandsire *Guintheline* did passe
 For vertue's praise, and *Martia* was his wife,
 A noble Queenethat wise and learned was,
 And gaue her selfe to study all her life,
 Deuising lawes, discust the ends of strife
 Amongst the *Britaynes* to her endlesse fame :
 Her statutes had of *Martian* lawes the name.⁵

5.

My father eke was sober, sage, and wise,
Cicilius hight, King *Guintheline* his sonne,
 Of noble Princes then my stocke did rise,
 And of a Prince of *Cornwall* first begonne :
 But what thereby of glory haue I wonne?
 Can this suffice to aunswere eke for mee,
 I came by parents of an high degree?

6.

Or shall I say, I was forsooth the King?⁶
 Then might I liue as lewdely as I lust,
 No sure, I cannot so auoide the sting
 Of shame that prickes such Princes are vniust.
 Wee rather should vnto our vertues trust,
 For vertue of the auncient bloud or kinne,
 Doth onely praise the parties shee's within.⁷

7.

And nobles onely borne (of this bee sure)
 Without the vertues of their noble race,
 Doe quite and cleane themselues thereby obscure,
 And their renowne and dignities deface :
 They doe their birth and lineage all deface,

⁵ " Marcia was right connynge and conde many maner craftes, she made the lawe called Marcene lawe." *Polychronicon*.

⁶ Or shall I saye, Kimarus I was king. ed. 1575.

⁷ Praise the men that vertuous bin. N.

For why, in deede they euer ought so well
In vertues graue, as titles braue excell.

8.

But oft (God wot) they fare as erst did I,
They thinke if once they come of Princely stocke,
Then are they placed safe and sure, so hie
Aboue the rest, as founded on a rocke :

Of wise mens warnings all they make a mocke :

They counsayles graue as abiect reedes despise,
And count the braue men gracious, worthy, wise.

9.

This kingdome came to mee by due discent,
For why my father was before mee King,
But I to pleasure all and lust was bent,
I neuer reckte of lustice any thing,
What purpose I did meane to passe to bring,*
That same t'accomplish I with all my might
Endeuourde euer, were it wrong or right.

10.

I deemde the greatest ioyes in earthly hap,
I thought my pleasures euer would abide,
I seemde to sit in Lady Fortune's lap,
I reckte not all the world mee thought beside :
I did by lust my selfe and others guide,
Whereby the fates to worke my bane withall,
And cut mee of, thus wise procurde my fall.

11.

As I was alwayes bent to hunting still,
(Yet hunting was no vice to those I had)
When I three yeares had ruld this Realme at will,
In chace a chaunce did make my heart ful sad :
Wilde cruell beasts as desperate and mad

* Purpose I to passe did meane to bring. N.

Turnde backe on mee, as I them brought to bay,
And in their rage my sinfull corps did slay.⁹

12.

A iust reward for so vniust a life,
No worse a death then I deserued yore,
Such wrecks in th'end to wretches all are rife,
Who may and will not call for grace before :
My wilfull deedes were nought, what wilt thou more?
For wanton wildenesse, witlesse, hedelesse toyes
The brutishe beasts bereaude mee of my ioyes.¹⁰

LENUOY.

1.

By this appeares that time in *Britayne* were
Aboundant store of wolues, and vices rife :
Mempricius tale the like doth witnesse beare,
And so doth *Madan's* mangled end of life :
These though they scaped stout *Bellonae's* knife,

⁹ Of Kimarus "there is nothing written, but that he was a wilde and wanton Prince, geuen to all pleasure and pastime, and reigned but thre yeres, beyng slain of his aduersaries as he was a hunting." *Grafton*.

¹⁰ THE AUTHOURE.

On this Kimarus left me all alone,
And so did Morpheus, then I thought to reste :
But yet againe he came presenting one,
For audience likewise making his requeste,
A worthy prince, he ware a warlike creste :
A blade in hande, he bloudy rusty bore,
Was all his harnesse from his shoulders tore.

His armes and handes were all embrued in bloud,
So was his breste, but all the rest beside
Seemde rayde with matter vyle, or slimy mud,
With red and yelowe as it were bedide :
You scarcely could the sight therof abide :
Yet sith he seemde some worthy wight to be,
It brought by farre lesse squemishnes to me.

Yet in the end for vices foule they fell
By Wolues deuourde, mine Author so doth tell.

2.

The glory vaine that fades and flits away,
Makes men so blinde, they looke not on the end :
Allurde to losse, on earthly pompe they stay,
But fewe to scale the vertue towres contend :
Fewe seeke, by Christ, the heauenly way to wend ;
The onely causes why these Princes fell,
Are vices vile, as auncient authors tell.

3.

Next after this, on stage a Prince appearde,
With slimye glere, and bloud beraide that came,
In hand a dagger drawne his foe that dearde
Hee bare perdy, and showde mee eke the same :
And thus his tale in order hee did frame
As shall ensue, so hee mee thought did tell
How hee was slaine, and slewe a monster fell.

HOW KING MORIN-

*dus was deuoured by a monster, the
yeare before Christ,*

303.

1.

LET mee likewise declare my facts and fall,
And eke recite what means this slimy glere!
You neede not faine so quaynte a looke at all,
Although I seeme so fulsome euery where:
This blade in bloudy hand, perdy, I beare,¹
And all his gore bemingled with this glue,
In witnes I my deadly enmy slewe.²

2.

Then marke my tale, beware of rashnes vile,
I am *Morindus* once was *Britayne* King,
On whom did sweetely³ Lady Fortune smile,
Till shee mee to her top of towres did bring:⁴
My fame both farre and neare shee made to ring,
And eke my praise exalted so to skye,
In all my time more famous none then I.

3.

Some say I was by birth a bastard bace,
Begotten of the Prince his concubine,
But what I was declared well my grace,
My fortitude and stature Princely mine.
My father eke that came of Princely lyne,
King *Danius* gaue not so bace degree,
Nor yet the noble *Britaynes* vnto mee.

¹ Which I do beare. N.

² I the dreadfull monster slew. N.

³ On whom long time did. N.

⁴ Till on her wheele's steepe top she did me bring. N.

4.

For feats of armes and warlike poynts I past,
 In courage stoute there liu'de not then my peere,
 I made them all that knewe my name agaste,
 And heard how great my enterprises were,
 To shrink, and slinke, and shift aside for feare:

All which at length did mee such glory bring,
 My father dead, the *Britaynes* made mee King.

5.

But see how blinde wee are, when Fortune smiles,
 How senceles wee when dignities increase,
 Wee euer vse our selues discretely whiles
 Wee litle haue, and loue to liue in peace:
 Smale fauters facts with mercy wee release:⁵

Wee vse no rigoure, rancoure, rapine, such
 As after when wee haue our willes to much.

6.

For while that I a subiect was, no King,
 While I had nothing but my facts alone:
 I studied still in euery kinde of thing
 To serue my prince, and vnderfang his fone:
 To vse his subiects friendly euerychone,
 And for them all aduentures such to take,
 As might them all my person fauoure make.

7.

But when I once attained had the Crowne,
 I waxed cruell tyranous and fell,
 I had no longer minde of my renowne,
 I vsde my selfe to ill, the trueth to tell:
 O bace degree in happie case full well!

Which art not puffed with pride, vaine glory, hate,
 But art beneath content to hide thy fate.

⁵ Subiected thoughts doth wicked pride suppress. N.

8.

For I aloft, when once my heate was in,
 Not rain'd by reason ruled all by might,
 Ne prudence rekt, right, strength, or meane a pin,
 But with my friendes in anger all would fight,
 I strooke, kilde, slewe who euer were in sight,
 Without respect, remorse, reprove, regard,
 And like a madde man in my fury far'd,

9.

I deemde my might and fortitude was such,
 That I was able thereby conquere all,
 High kingdome's seate encreast my pompe so much,
 My pryde me thought impossible to fall:
 But God confoundes our proude deuices all,
 And brings that thing wherein we most doe trust,
 To our destruction by his iudgement iust.

10.

For when three yeares I ruled had this Ile,
 Without all rule as was my rulesse life,⁶
 The rumour ranne abroad within a while,
 And chiefly in the Norwest Countrey rife,
 A monster came from *Th'irish* seas, brought grieve
 To all my subiectes, in those coastes did dwell,
 Deuouring man and beast, a monster fell.

11.

Which when I knewe for trueth, I straight prepar'd
 In warlike wise my selfe to trye the case,
 My haste thereto a courage bold declard,
 For I alone would enter in the place:
 At which,⁷ with speare on horse I fet my race,
 But on his scales it enter could no more,
 Then might a bulrush on a brasen dore.

⁶ Without all law as was my lawlesse life. N.

⁷ Whom. ed. 1575.

12.

Agayne I prou'd yet, nought at all preuaylde,
 To breake my speare and not to pearce his syde :
 With that the roring monster me assaylde,
 So terrifide my horse I coulde not ride,
 Wherewith I lighted, and with sworde I tride
 By strokes and thrustes to finde some open in,
 But of my fight hee neuer past a pin.⁸

13.

And when I weried was and spent with fight,
 That kept my selfe with heede his daunger fro,
 As last almost ashamde I wanted might,
 And skil to worke the beastly monster wo,
 I gate me nerer with my sworde him to,
 And thought his flankes or vnder partes to wounde,
 Yf there for scales⁹ might any place bee founde.

14.

But frustrate of my purpose, finding none,
 And eke within his daunger entring quite,
 The grizely beast straight seasoned¹ mee vpon,
 And let his talauntes on my corpes to light,
 Hee gript my shoulders, not resist I might,
 And roaring with a greedy rauening looke,
 At once in iawes my body whole hee tooke.

15.

The way was large, and downe he drewe mee in,
 A monstrous paunche for rowmth, and wondrous wide,
 But (for I felt more softer there the skinne)
 At once I drewe a dagger by my side :
 I knewe my life no longer coulde abide,

⁸ By strokes to find a passage to his life,
 But now I found in vaine was all my strife. N.

⁹ From scales. ed. 1575.

¹ Seazed. N.

For rammish stench, bloude, poyson, slimy glere,
That in his body so abundant were.

16.

Wherefore I labouring to procure his death,
While first my dagger digde aboute his harte,
His force to cast mee welnigh drewe my breath,
But as hee felt within his woundes to smarte,
I ioyde to feele the mighty monster starte,
That roard, and belcht, and groande, and plungde, and cryde,
And tost mee vp and downe from syde to syde.

17.

Long so in panges hee plungde and panting lay,
And drewe his wynde so fast with such a powre,
That quite and cleane hee drewe my breath away,
Wee both were deade well nigh within an howre.
Lo thus one beastly monster did deuoure
An other monster moodeles to his² payne :
At once the realme was rid of monsters twayne.³

18.

Here mayst thou see of fortitude the hap,
Where prudence, iustice, temperaunce hath no place,
How sodaynly wee taken are in trap,
When wee dispise good vertues to embrace,
Intemperaunce doth all our deedes deface,
And letts vs heedeles headlong run so fast,
Wee seeke our owne destruction at the last.

² Vs. N.

³ This fable of the monster is repeated with little (if any) variation by most writers. "As he (Morindus) wente vppon a tyme by the see side, he mette a grete beste that was blak and horrible, and hidous: and wente that hit had bene a whale of the see: And bente an arweblaste and wolde haue slayn that beste with a quarell, but he myght nought smyte hit. And when he hade shote alle his quarell, the beste anone come to hym in grete haste, and him deuourede alyue, and so he deide." *M. S. Brute.*

19.

For hee that hath of fortitude and might,
 And thereto hath a kingdom ioynde withall,
 Except hee also guide him selfe aright,
 His powre and strength preuayleth him but small,
 Hee cannot scape at length an haples fall :

You may perceiue a myrrour playne by me,
 Which may with wisdom well sufficient bee.⁴

LENUOY.

1.

Wee reade the valiaunt actes of *Hercules*,
 His mighty labours all and woefull end,
 But *Samson's* conquests of his enemies,
 The holy histories to vs commend.
 Yet who so shal on fortitude depend,
 Still trusting to obtayne the victory,
 Let him beholde *Morindus'* history.

2.

Or of the death of *Theseus* they tell,
 The fall of *Brennus* and his woefull end,
 Though hee in force and powre bee nere so fell,
 Hee cannot still on fortitude depend :
 Tis vertue sole that all the wise commend :

⁴ ————— an haplesse falle,
 Or God's reuenge, example take by mee,
 And let my death sufficient warning bee. ed. 1575.

THE AUTHOURE.

I could not thus departe to take my reste,
 For Morpheus bad me byde and heare the last.

(Quoth he) behinde as yet, is one the beste:

“ Do stay a while, giue care till he be past,

“ And therewithall approtched one full fast,

The worthiest wight I euer erste did see :

These wordes he spake, or like it seemed mee.

Shee still obtaynes for aye the victory,
By true reporte of euery history.

3.

Strength, beauty, wealth, facts, fauoure, fearcenesse fell,
All earthly pleasures feelee a paynefull end,
Then happy thrice is hee (the truth to tell)
That onely can on heauenly powre depend:
But now I must to you the next commend,
In blacke, mee thought, appearing mournefully,
Declaring thus his woefull misery.

HOW KING EMERIAN-

nus for his tyranny was deposed, a-

bout the yeare before Christ,

235.¹

1.

THE wofull wight that fell from throne to thrall,
The wretch that woue the web wherein hee goes,
A dolefull blacke bad weede still weare hee shall
In woefull sorte, and nothing blame his foes:
What neede such one at all his name disclose?

Except the haplesse rest of *Britaynes* should,²
Not here for shame recite his name hee would,

2.

I am *Emeriane* King that raignde a space,
Scarce all one yeare,³ in *Britayne* Isle long sence,
But for I was in maners voide of grace,
Ferce, tyrannous, and full of negligence,
Bloud thirsty, cruell, vaine, deuoide of sence;
The *Britaynes* mee deposde, from seat and crowne,
And reaude mee quite of riches and renowne.

3.

I was despisde and banisht from my blisse,
Discountnaunste, fayne to hide my selfe for shame:
What neede I longer stand to tell thee this?
My selfe was for my woefull fall to blame:
My raygne was short, in fewe my fall I frame,
My life was lothsome, soone like death that found,
Let this suffice a warning blaste to sound.

¹ Not in the first edition.

² Except the rest of Britaine princes should. N.

³ The chronicles say six or seuen yeares, and deposed for his tyranny.

LENUOY.

1.

'The cause why here this Prince is briefe in talke
Is, for the stories scarce remembre such,
What neede I then with them more farder walke?
Sith this perhaps may seeme, is sayd to much,
I must but briefly these vnworthy tutch:

The next approaching pufte with dropsie wanne,

Thus wise, mee thought, his yexeing⁴ tale beganne.

⁴ To yex, to have the hiccough. *Johnson.*

HOW KING CHIRIN-

nus giuen to dronkennesse raygned but

one yeare. Hee died about the yeare

before Christ,

137.¹

1.

THOUGH I my surfets haue not yet out slept,
Nor scarce with quiet browes begin my tale,
Let not my drousy talke bee ouer leapt,
For though my belching sent of wine or ale,
Although my face bee falloe, puft, and pale,
And legges with dropsy swell, and panche resound,
Yet let mee tell what vice did mee confound.

2.

Perhaps thou thinkste so groase a blockhead blunt,
A sleepy swinishe head can nothing say :
The greatest heads and smalest eke were wont
To beare in them the finest wits away :
This thing is true thou canst it not denay,
And *Bacchus* eke ensharps the wits of some :
Fæcundi calices quem non fecere disertum?

3.

Yet sith long since both braynes and all were spent,
And this in place amongste my mates I speake,
I trust thou wilt bee here withall content,
Although in deede my wits of talke are weake :
So old a vessayle cannot chuse but leake,
A drousy nole² that lyes on drinke a sleepe so long,
May pardon craue, although his tongue trip twifold wrong.³

¹ Not in the first edition.

² An unwilling dolt.

³ A drunken sot whose faltering feete do slip,
Must pardon craue, his tongue in talke will trip. N.

4.

Chirinnus was my name a *Britayne* King,
 But rulde short time, Sir *Bacchus* was my let :
*Erinnys*⁴ eke my sences so did swing,
 That reason could no seat amongst them get :
 Wherefore the truth I pray thee playnly set,
 I gaue my selfe to surfets swilling wine,
 And led my life much like a drunken swine.

5.

Deseases grewe, distempraunce made mee swell,
 My parched liuer lusted still for baste,
 My tympane sounded like a taber well,
 And nought but wine did like my greedy taste,
 This vice and moe my life and mee defaste,
 My face was blowne and blubd with dropsy wanne,
 And legges more like a monster then a man.

6.

So not in shape [and shewe] I onely altered was,
 My dispositions chaunged mee⁵ likewise,
 For vices make a man [a bull,] a goate, an asse,
 A swine or horse, (as Poets can comprise)
 Transforming into beasts by sundry wise
 Such men as keepe not onely shape of men,
 But them mishapeth also now and then.

7.

Wherefore let who so loues to liue long dayes
 Without deseases, strong in youthfull state,
 Beware of *Bacchus*' booth, which all betrayes,
 The vayle of vices vayne, the hauen of hate,
 The well of weake delightes, the brande of bate,
 By which I loste my health, life, realme and fame,

⁴ *Erynnys*, i. e. the goddesses that were to search into those men who had committed heinous offences: their names are *Megæra*, *Tisiphone*, and *Alecto*.

⁵ Chaung'd in me. N.

[My wealth, my crowne, my scepter, sheelde and name :]
And only wan the shrowding sheete of shame.

LENUOY.

1.

Of this bad vice who shall embrace the loue,
And not refraine him selfe there from by grace,
Let him bee sure it shall his sence remoue,
His beauty reaue, his facts and fame deface,
His wealth, strength, health, shall waste and were apace,
Hee cannot liue in health till hee bee olde,
Nor purchase health and sober fame againe with sowes⁶ of golde,

2.

The Poets painted *Bacchus* naked, bare,
Because hee doth all secrets deepe disclose,
In woemen's weede because men feebled are,
Effeminate them selues to wine dispose,
Like wanton childe likewise they faine hee goes,
As dronkerds wanton were though nere so olde,
Not wonne to sage and sober life with sowes of golde.

3.

But naked therefore I suppose hee's faynde,
Because hee makes men naked, poore, and bare:
By him they waste away the wealth they gaynde,
And plunge them selues in seas of woefull care,
Or naked then of vertues all they are,
When they to *Bacchus* bend, both yong and olde,
Not wonne to sage and sober life, with sowes of gold.

⁶ Sow, a great lump of melted iron or lead. *Bailey.*

4.

Who loues to liue a wise and godly life,
 Let him refuse such naked gods to serue:
 So shall he saue his fame auoyding strife,
 And right report of all good men deserue.
 But from my purpose lest I seeme to swerue:
 There next me thought a Prince I did behold
 Of vicious life, and thus his fates he did vnfold.

HOW KING VARIANVS

gaue himselfe to the lustes of the flesh,

and dyed about the yeare before Christ,

136.¹

1.

WHERE no good giftes haue place, nor beare the sway,
 What are the men but wilful castaway?
 Where gifts of grace doe garnish well the King,
 There is no want, the land can lacke no thing:
 The Court is stil well stor'd with noble [prudent] men,
 In Townes and Cities Gouvernours are graue:
 [The lands are tild,] the common wealth doth prosper² then,
 And wealth at will the Prince and people haue.

2.

Perhaps you aske, what Prince is this appeares?
 What meanes his talke in these our golden yeares?
 A *Britayne* Prince that *Varianus* hight,
 I helde some time the [crowne and] scepter here by right:
 And though no neede there be in these your [golden] dayes
 Of states to tell, or vertues good discriue,
 Good counsaile yet may after stand³ in stead alwayes,
 When time agayne may vices olde reuiue.

3.

If not: yet giue me leaue amongst the rest
 Which felt the⁴ fall, or had their deaths addrest:
 My cause of fall let me likewise declare,

¹ Not in the first edition.

² Also prosper. N.

³ Yet doth stand. N.

⁴ Their. N.

For falles the deathes of vicious Princes are :
 They fal, when all good men reioyce to heare or see
 That they short time enioyde their places hie,
 For Princes which for [princely] vertues prayed bee,
 By death arise extold, they scale the skie.

4.

I will be short because it may suffice
 That soone is sayde, to warne the sage and wise :
 Or if that they no warning neede to haue,
 This may perchaunce somewhat their labour saue
 With yonger heads, that will⁵ not heare their faultes them tolde,
 By such as would admonish them for loue :
 When they my words and warnings here [of vice] beholde,
 They may regarde and see their owne behoue.

5.

About my time the Princes liu'de not long,
 For all were giuen almost to vice and wrong :
 My selfe voluptuous was abandond quite,
 To take in fleshly lust my whole delite :
 A pleasure vile, that drawes a man from [all good] thrifte and grace,
 Doth iust desires, and heauenly thoughtes expell :
 Decayes the corps,⁶ defiles the soule, [the factes] and fame deface,
 And bringes him downe to *Plutoe's* paynes of hell.

6.

For this my sinne my subiectes hated mee,
 Repining still my stayned life to see :
 As when the Prince is wholly giuen to vice,
 And holdes the lewder sort in greatest price,
 The land decayes, disorder [sprouts and] springes abroad,
 The worser sort do robbe, pille, polle, and spoyle,
 The weaker are constraynd to⁷ beare the greatest loade,
 And leese the goodes for which [full sore] they erst did toyle.

⁵ With those that will. N.⁶ Doth spoile the corps. N.⁷ Weaker force to. N.

7.

How can *Iehoua* iust abide the wrong?
 He will not suffer such haue scepter long.
 As he did strike for sinfull life my seate,
 And did me downe from royall kingdome beate,
 So hath be done for aye, examples⁷ are in stories rife,
 No wicked wight can gouerne long in rest :
 For eyther some [the like] bereaues him of his life,
 Or downe his throne and kingdome is deprest.

Bid Princes then and noble Peeres the like delights detest.

There is no way the [iudgement high and] wrath of *Ioue* to
 wrest.

LENUOY.

1.

What should I longer on such Princes stay,
 Whose factes vnworthie were to be enrolde :
 The cause why thence I make more speede away,
 Is for his sake, whose fame hath farre bene tolde,
 That noble *Nennius*' Duke, a captaine bolde,
 Of royall bloud, to Prince and countrey kinde,
 Whose fame a place aboue the skies shall finde.

2.

When he the feates of armes had learned well,
 And coulde encounter with the best aliue,
 Hee not to treason nor to falshode fell,
 Nor with his ciuill friendes at home to striue :
 But hence the landed *Romaynes* out to driue.
 Which sith he did, to Prince and countrey kinde,
 His fame a place aboue the skies shall finde.

⁷ The like examples. N:

3.

Eke sith the rest, as were their liues obscure,
Haue tolde their tales, but simply as you see :
To helpe my style, the *Muses* most demure,
For *Nennius*' sake, gaue greater grace to mee,
Or else I thinke, frend Reader, t'was for thee,
That when thou readst of *Nennius*' noble minde,
Thou maist be so to Prince and countrey kinde.

4.

I will no longer thee from reading stay,
But wish thee marke howe he exhorteth all :
Do learne by him for countrey's sake to fray,
In peace no broyles of warres at home to brall :
And thinke thou seest that noble captayne tall
Thus wise display his warlike noble minde,
Duke *Nennius*, so to Prince and countrey kinde.

Howe the worthie *Britaine* Duke Nennius as a valiaunt souldier and faithfull subiecte encountred with Iulius Cæsar, was by him death wounded: yet naytheles¹ he gate Cæsar's sworde, put him to flight, slewe therewith Labianus a Tribune of the *Romaynes*, endured fight till his countrey men wanne the field, and now encourageth all good subiectes, to defende their countrey from the power of forraine and entruding enemies. He was slaine about the yeere before Christ,

52.

1.

I MAY by right some later writers blame,
Of stories olde, as rude or negligent :
Or else I may them wel vnlearned name,
Or heedlesse in those thinges about they went :
Some time on me as well they might haue spent,²
As on such traytours, tyrants, harlots, those
Which to their countreyes were the deadliest foes.³

2.

Ne for my selfe I would not⁴ this recite,
(Although I haue occasion good thereto)
But sure, me thinkes it is too great despite
These men to others and their countreyes do,

¹ Neuerthelesse. N.

² This censure was probably from the circumstance of the deeds and name of Nennius being omitted in the Polychronicon, and by Fabian, Lanquet, Rastell, and Stowe.

³ As on such tyrants who as bloodie foes,
Vnto their countrey wrought such deadly woes. N.

⁴ As for my selfe I doe not. N.

⁵ That to the dead these moderne writers doe. N.

For there are *Britaynes*, neyther one or two,
Whose names in stories scarcely once appeare :
And yet their liues examples worthie were.

3.

'Tis worthie prayse (I graunt) to write the endes
Of vicious men, and teach the like beware :
For what hath he of vertue that commendes
Such persons lewde, as naught of vertue's care :
But for to leaue out those prayse-worthie are,
Is like as if a man had not the skill
To prayse the good, but discommend the ill.

4.

I craue no prayse, although my selfe deseru'd
As great a laude as any *Britayne* yore :⁶
But I would haue it tolde how well I seru'd
My Prince and Countrie, Fayth to both I bore :
All noble hearts hereby with courage more
Mayboth their forayne foes in fight⁷ withstand,
And of their enemies haue⁸ the vpper hand.

5.

Agayne, to shewe how valiaunt then wee were
(You *Britaynes* good) to moue your hearts thereby,
All other nations lesse in fight to feare,
And for your countrie rather so to die
With valiaunt hauty courage, as did I,
Then liue in bondage, seruice, slavery, thrall
Of forayne powres, which hate your manhood all.

6.

Doe giue mee leaue to speake but euen a while,
And marke, and write the story I thee tell :
By North from *London* more then fifty mile,

⁶ Any one of yore. N.

⁷ Both tall forraine force in fight. N.

⁸ Of their foes may haue. N.

There lies the Isle of *Ely* knowne full well,
 Wherein my father built a place to dwell :
 And for because hee liked well the same,
 Hee gaue the place hee *Ely* hight his name.⁹

7.¹

'Tis namde the Isle of *Ely* yet, perdy
 My father namde it so : yet writers misse,
 Or if I may bee bolde to say, they ly
 Of him, which tell that farre vntruth like is :
 What truth (I pray you) seemes to bee in this
 Hee *Ely* lou'd, a goodly place built there,
 Most it delited, raygnde not full a yeare.²

8.

Hee raygned forty yeares, as other tell,
 Which seemes (as 'tis) a tale more true by farre.³
 By Iustice guided hee his subiects well,
 And liude in peace, without the broyles of warre.
 His childrens noble acts in stories are,
 In vulgar tongue : but nought is sayd of mee,
 And yet I worthy was the yongste of three.

9.

His eldest sonne and heyre was after King,
 A noble Prince and hee was named *Lud*,
 Full politicke and wise in euery thing,
 And one that wil'd his Countrey alwayes good :
 Such vses, customes, statutes hee withstood,
 As seemde to bring the publique weales decay,
 And them abolisht, brake, repealde away.

⁹ Place height *Ely* of his name. N. Some, as Camden observes, derive the name of *Ely* "from *Helig*, a British word signifying willows or sallows, which it bears in abundance; and indeed they are the only thriving trees here." *Camden's Britannia*.

¹ This stanza omitted by Niccols.

² Lanquet, Stowe, Grafton, Flores Histor. Margin of ed. 1575.

³ ————— as stories tell,

And fame did beare his name both wide and far. N.

10.

So hee the walles of *Troy* the new renewde,
Them fortified with⁴ forty Towres about :
And at the west side of the wall hee vewde
The Towre o'th⁵ gate to keepe⁶ the enmyes⁷ out,
That made hee prisons for the poore bankrout,
 Namde Ludgate yet, for free men debtors, free
 From hurt, till with their creditours they gree.

11.

Some say the City also tooke the name
Of *Lud* my brother : for hee it reparde :
And I must needes as true confesse the same,
For why that time no cost on it hee sparde :
He still increast and peopled euery warde,
 And bad them aye *Kaerlud*, the City call,
 Or *Ludstone*, now you name it *London* all.

12.

At length hee died, his children vnder age,
The elder named was *Androgeus* :
Committing both vnto my brother's charge,
The yonger of them hight *Tennancius* :
The *Britaynes* wanting aged rulers thus,
 Choose for that time *Cassibellane* their King,
 My brother Iustice ment in euery thing.

13.

The *Romayne* then the mighty *Cæsar* fought
Agaynst the *Galles*, and conquerde them by might :
Which done, hee stode on shoares where see hee mought
The *Ocean* Seas, and *Britayne* clieues full bright.
(Quoth hee) what region lyes there in my sight ?
 Mee thinkes some Iland in the Seas I see,
 Not yet subdued, nor vanquist yet by mee.

⁴ Enlargde them made with. ed. 1575.

⁵ Sic. Strong. N.

⁶ A place for gates to keepe. ed. 1575.

⁷ Foemen. N.

14.

With that they told him wee the *Britaynes* were,
 A people stout, and fearce in feates of warre :
 (Quoth hee) the *Romaynes* neuer yet with feare
 Of nation rude were daunted of so farre,
 Wee therefore mind to proue them what they are.
 And therewithall hee⁸ letters hither sent,
 By those ambassage brought, and thus they went.⁹

C. I V L I V S C Æ S A R

Consull of Rome, to Cassibellane

King of Britayne, sendeth greeting.

Sith that the Gods haue giuen vs all the West,
 As subiects to our *Romayne* Empire hie,
 By warre, or as it seemed *Ioue* the best,
 Of whom wee *Romaynes* came, and chiefly I :
 Therefore to you which in the *Ocean* dwell,
 (As yet not vnderneath subiection due
 Wee send our letters greeting : wete yee well
 In warlike cases thus wee deale with you,
 First, that you, as the other regions, pay
 Vs tribute yearely, *Romaynes* wee require :
 Then, that you will with all the force you may
 Withstand our foes as yours, with sword and fire :
 And thirdly, that by these you hostage¹⁰ send
 T'assure the couenaunts once agreed by you :
 So with your daunger lesse our warres may end
 Else bid wee warre. *Cassibellane* adieu.

CÆSAR.

⁸ The. ed. 1575.⁹ —————these letters he did frame,
 Brought by ambassadours which hither came, N.¹⁰ Pledges. ed. 1575.

15.

No sooner were these¹ *Cæsar*'s letters seene,
But straight the King for all his nobles sent,
Hee shewde them what their auncestours had beene,
And prayde them tell in this their whole intent:
Hee told them whereabout the *Romaynes* went,
And what subiection was, how seruile they
Should bee if *Cæsar* bare their pompe away.

16.

And all the *Britaynes* euen as set on fire,
(My selfe not least enflamed was to fight)
Did humbly him in ioyfull wise desire,²
That hee his letters would to *Cæsar* write,
And tell him playne wee past not of his spite:
Wee past as litle of the *Romaynes*, wee,
And lesse then they of vs, if lesse might bee.

17.

Wherefore the ioyfull King agayne replide,
Through counsaile wise of all the nobles had:
By letters hee the *Romaynes* hests denide,
Which made the *Britaynes* hauty harts full glad:
And eke the *Romayne* Consull proude as mad³
To heare these letters written: thus they went,
Which hee agayne to mighty *Cæsar* sent.

CASSIBELLANE

King of Britayne to C. Iulius Cæsar

Consull of Rome.

As thou, O *Cæsar*, writste the Gods haue geuen to thee
The west: so I repleye, they gaue this Island⁴ mee.
Thou sayst you *Romaynes* and thy selfe of Gods descend,
And darst thou then to spoile our *Troian* blood pretend?

¹ This. N.

² Require. ed. 1575.

³ No doubt the Romaines more then half were mad. ed. 1575.

⁴ Ile to mee. N.

14.

With that they told him wee the *Britaynes* were,
 A people stout, and fearce in feates of warre :
 (Quoth hee) the *Romaynes* neuer yet with feare
 Of nation rude were daunted of so farre,
 Wee therefore mind to proue them what they are.
 And therewithall hee⁸ letters hither sent,
 By those ambassage brought, and thus they went.⁹

C. I V L I V S C Æ S A R

Consull of Rome, to Cassibellane

King of Britayne, sendeth greeting.

Sith that the Gods haue giuen vs all the West,
 As subiects to our *Romayne* Empire hie,
 By warre, or as it seemed *Ioue* the best,
 Of whom wee *Romaynes* came, and chiefly I :
 Therefore to you which in the *Ocean* dwell,
 (As yet not vnderneath subiection due
 Wee send our letters greeting : wete yee well
 In warlike cases thus wee deale with you,
 First, that you, as the other regions, pay
 Vs tribute yearely, *Romaynes* wee require :
 Then, that you will with all the force you may
 Withstand our foes as yours, with sword and fire :
 And thirdly, that by these you hostage¹⁰ send
 T'assure the couenaunts once agreed by you :
 So with your daunger lesse our warres may end
 Else bid wee warre. *Cassibellane* adieu.

CÆSAR.

⁸ The. ed. 1575.⁹ —————these letters he did frame,
 Brought by ambassadours which hither came, N.¹⁰ Pledges. ed. 1575.

15.

No sooner were these¹ *Cæsar*'s letters seene,
But straight the King for all his nobles sent,
Hee shewde them what their auncestours had beene,
And prayde them tell in this their whole intent:
Hee told them whereabout the *Romaynes* went,
And what subiection was, how seruile they
Should bee if *Cæsar* bare their pompe away.

16.

And all the *Britaynes* euen as set on fire,
(My selfe not least enflamed was to fight)
Did humbly him in ioyfull wise desire,²
That hee his letters would to *Cæsar* write,
And tell him playne wee past not of his spite:
Wee past as litle of the *Romaynes*, wee,
And lesse then they of vs, if lesse might bee.

17.

Wherefore the ioyfull King agayne replide,
Through counsaile wise of all the nobles had:
By letters hee the *Romaynes* hests denide,
Which made the *Britaynes* hauty harts full glad:
And eke the *Romayne* Consull proude as mad³
To heare these letters written: thus they went,
Which hee agayne to mighty *Cæsar* sent.

CASSIBELLANE

King of Britayne to C. Iulius Cæsar

Consull of Rome.

As thou, O *Cæsar*, writste the Gods haue geuen to thee
The west: so I repleye, they gaue this Island⁴ mee.
Thou sayst you *Romaynes* and thy selfe of Gods descend,
And darst thou then to spoile our *Troian* blood pretend?

¹ This. N.

² Require. ed. 1575.

³ No doubt the Romaines more then half were mad. ed. 1575.

⁴ Ile to mee. N.

Againe, though Gods haue giu'n thee all the world as thine,
 That's parted from the world, thou getst no land of mine.
 And sith likewise of Gods wee came a Nation free,
 Wee owe no tribute, ayde, or pledge to *Rome*, or thee:
 Retracte thy will, or wage thy warre, as likes thee best:
 Wee are to fight, and rather then to frendship, prest.
 To saue our Countrey from the force of foraine strife,
 Eche *Britayne* here is well content to venter life.
 Wee feare not of the end or daungers thou doest tell,
 But vse thy pleasure if thou maist, thus fare thou well.

CASSIBELLANE.

18.

When *Cæsar* had receau'd his aunswere so,
 It vext him much hee thereupon decreede⁵
 To wage vs warre, and worke vs *Britaynes* woe:
 Wherefore⁶ hee hasted hitherwarde with speede.
 Wee *Britaynes* eke preparde our selues⁷ with heede
 To meete the *Romaynes*, all in warlike guise,
 With all the force, and speede wee⁸ might deuise.

19.

And here the wiser deemde⁹ it meeter much
 T'assayle them first¹ at th'entry on this land,
 Then for to giue aryuall here² to such,
 Might with our victualls ayde³ our selues withstand:
 'Tis better far thy enemy to aband⁴
 Quite from thy borders, to a forayne⁵ soyle,
 Then hee at home thee and thy Countrey spoile.

⁵ He fully straight decreed. ed. 1575.⁶ Therefore. ib.⁷ The Britaines eke prepar'd themselves. N.⁸ They. N.⁹ Wee Britaynes then farre deemde. ed. 1575.¹ To meete him first. ib.² Giue an entry here. ib.³ Here. ib.⁴ The enemies t'aband. N.⁵ Straunger. ed. 1575.

20.

Wherefore wee met him at his entry in,
And pitche our camps directly in his way :
Wee minded sure to leese, or else to winne
The praise, before wee past from thence away :
So when that both the armies were in ray,
And trumpets blaste on euery side was blowne,
Our mindes to either eche were quickly knowne.

21.

Wee ioyned battayle, fearcely both wee fought,
The *Romaynes* to enlarge their Empyre's fame :
And wee with all the force and might wee mought,
To saue our Countreye and to keepe our name :
O, worthy *Britaynes* ! learne to doe the same :
Wee brake the rayes of all the *Romayne* hoast,
And made the mighty *Cæsar* leaue his boast.

22.

Yet hee the worthyest Captaine euer was,
Brought all in ray and fought agayne a new,
His skilfull souldiers hee could bring to passe
At once, for why his traynings all they knew :
No sooner I his noble corps did vewe,
But in I brake amongste the Captaynes band,
And there I fought with *Cæsar* hand to hand.

23.

O God thou mightst haue giuen a *Britayne* grace,
T'haue slayne the *Romayne Cæsar* noble then,
Which sought his bloud the *Britaynes*^s to deface,
And bring in bondage valiaunt worthy men,
Hee neuer should haue gone to *Rome* agen,
To fight with *Pompey*, or his peeres to slay,
Or else to bring his Countrey in decay.

^s Sought the noble Britaines. N.

24.

It ioyde my harte, to strike on *Cæsar's* crest,
 O *Cæsar*, that there had bene none but wee!
 I often made my sword to try thy brest,
 But Lady Fortune did not fauoure mee:⁶
 I able was mee thought with *Cæsars* three
 'To try the case: I made thy harte to quake,
 When on thy crest with mighty stroke I strake,

25.

The strokes thou strookste mee hurt mee nought at all,
 For why, thy strength was nothing in respect:
 But thou hadst bath'd thy sword in poyson all,
 Which did my wound, not deadly els, infect:
 Yet was I or I parted thence bewreckte,
 I gate thy sworde from thee for all thy fame,
 And made thee flye for feare to eate the same,

26.

For when thy sword was in my target fast,
 I made thee flye and quickly leaue thy hold,
 Thou neuer wast in all thy life so gast,
 Nor durst agayne bee euer halfe so bold:
 I made a number *Romaynes* hartes full cold:
 Fight, fight, you noble *Britaynes* now (quoth I)
 Wee neuer all will vnreuenged die.

27.

What *Cæsar* though thy prayse and mine bee od,
 (Perdy the stories⁷ scarce remember mee)
 Though Poets all of thee doe make a God,
 (Such simple fooles in making Gods they bee)
 Yet if I might⁸ my quarell try'd⁹ with thee,
 Thou neuer hadst retournde to *Rome* agayne,
 Nor of thy faithfull friends bin beastly slayne.

⁶ Not looke on mee. ed, 1575.⁸ I had. N.⁷ The ancient stories. N.⁹ My case haue tride. ed, 1575.

28.

A number *Britaynes* mightst thou there haue seene
Death-wounded fight,¹ and spoile their spitefull foes:
My selfe maimde slewe and mangled mo (I weene)
When I was hurte then twenty more of those:
I made the *Romaynes* harts to take their hose,²
In all the campe no *Romayne* scarce I spide,
Durst halfe the³ combate gainst a *Britayne* byde.

29.

At length I met a noble man, they cald
Him *Labienus*, one of *Cæsar's* friends,
A Tribune erst⁴ had many *Britaynes* thrald,
Was one of *Cæsar's* legats, forth hee sends:
Well met (quoth I) I minde to make th'amends,⁵
For all thy frendships⁶ to our Countrey crew:
And so with *Cæsar's* sword his friend I slew.

30.

What neede I name you euery *Britayne* here,
As first the King, the nobles all besyde,
Full stout and worthy wights in warre that were,
As euer erst the stately *Romaynes* tryde:
Wee fought so long they durst no longer bide:
Proude *Cæsar* hee for all his bragges and boste
Flew backe to ships, with halfe his scattered hoste.

31.

If hee had bene a God (as sotts him nam'd)
Hee could not of vs *Britaynes* taken foile,
The Monarche *Cæsar* might haue bene asham'd

¹ Wounded in fight. N.

² Romaines stout their courage lose. N.

³ A. ed. 1575.

⁴ "Upon land Cæsar's horsemen at the first encounter were vanquished, and Laberius Durus the tribune slaine, in a place now called Cheston wood neare vnto Rochester, as saieth the Chronicle of Wigmore." *Stowe*.

⁵ Make thee mendes. ib.

⁶ Friendship.

From such an Island with his ships recoyle,
 Or else to flye and leaue behinde the spoile :
 But life is sweete, hee thought it better flye,
 Then byde amongste vs *Britaynes*, here⁷ to die.

32.

I had his sword was named *Crocea mors*,
 With which hee gaue mee in the head a stroke,
 The venime of the which had such a force,
 It able was to pearce the harte of oke :
 No medicines might the poyson out reuoke,
 Wherefore though scarce hee perced had the skin,
 In fiteene dayes my braynes it ranced in.⁸

33.

And then to soone (alas) therefore I dyde,
 Yet would to God hee had returnde agayne,
 So that I might but once the dastard spyde,
 Before hee went I had the serpent slayne.
 Hee playde the coward cutthroate all to playne :
 A beastly serpent's harte that beaste detects,
 Which, or hee fight, his sworde with bane infects.

34.

Well, then my death brought *Cæsar* no renowne,
 For both I gate thereby eternall fame,
 And eke his sworde to strike his friends adowne :
 I slewe therewith his *Labiene* by name :

⁷ For. ib.

⁸ "The same [British] historie also maketh mention of one Belinus that was generall of Cassibellane's armie, and likewise of Nenius brother to Cassibellane, who in fight happened to get Cesar's swoord fastened in his shield by a blow which Cesar stroke at him. Androgeus also and Tenancius were at the battell in aid of Cassibellane. But Nenius died within 15 daies after the battell of the hurt receiued at Cesar's hand, although after he was so hurt, he slue Labienus one of the Romane tribunes: all which may well be true, sith Cesar either maketh the best of things for his owne honour, or else coucting to write but commentaries maketh no account to declare the needeful circumstances, or any more of the matter, than the chiefe points of his dealing." *Holinshed*.

With Prince against my Countrey foes I came,
Was wounded yet did neuer faynt nor yeelde,
Till *Cæsar* with his souldiers fled the felde.

34.

Who would not venter life in such a case?
Who would not fight at Countrey's whole request?
Who would not meeting *Cæsar* in the place,
Fight for life, Prince, and Countrey, with the best?
The greatest courage is by facts exprest:
Then for thy Prince, with fortitude, as I,
And Realme's defence,¹ is praise to liue or dy.

35.

Now write my life when thou hast leasure, and
Will all thy countrymen to learne by mee,
Both for their Prince and for their native land,
As valiaunt, bolde, and fearelesse for to bee.
A paterne playne of fortitude they see:
To which directly if themselues they frame,
They shall preserue their Countrey, fayth, and fame.

LENUOY.²

1.

When noble *Nennius* thus had ended talke,
Me thought he vanisht with so sweete a smell,³
As though the⁴ graces all with him had walkte,
And what I heard of musicke did excell,
Like notes of instruments no tongue can tell,

¹ Behofe. ed. 1575.

² The first eight stanzas of the "L'enuoy" form the like number commencing "the Author" in the edition of 1575.

³ He vanisht with so sweete an heauenly smell. ib.

⁴ Me seemde the. ib.

In^s harmony of such an heauenly noyes,
Me seemde they passed all our earthly ioyes.

2.

Their tunes declarde the battayle all so right,
As if the *Britaynes* and the *Romaines* than
Had presently in hearing and in sight,
A fresh the bloudy battayle all began :
Me thought I heard the vertues of the man
By notes declarde, and *Cæsar's* daungers tolde
More plainely then with eyes I might beholde.

3.

But when they came to tell of *Cæsar's* flight,
I saw the *Romaines* fall me thought full fast,
And all the *Britaynes* chace them euen till night :
Wherewith, the sound of *British* trumpets blast
Made me so madde, amazed⁶ at the last,
I lookt about for sworde or weapon, I
To runne with *Britaynes* cryde, they flie, they flie.

4.

Their flight to ships and foyle the trumpets sound,
And blewe the victours triumphes at returne :
The noyse well nigh my sences did confound,
And made my heart with all their loues to burne :
But when they gan the wounded *Britaynes* mourne
With doubled wayling shricketes, such cryes they sente
And sobbes and sighes, wel nigh my heart they rente.

5.

Eke chiefly they at noble *Nennius* stayde,
They seemde with dolefull tunes their notes to riue :
And sodaynly his prayse againe they playde,
O worthie *Nennius* for thy factes aliue !
The trumpe of fame was straightly chargde reuiue,

⁵ With. ed. 1575.

⁶ And mazed. ib.

And keepe, maintaine and celebrate his prayse :
Which done, me thought they vanisht⁷ quite their wayes.

6.

On this in troubled traunce I lay a while,⁸
In ioy reiöycing what a wight he was,
A worthie Duke,¹ that for this noble Ile
So fought it forth, a myrrour fayre,² a glasse
For those alieue : his vertues so surpasse,³
That⁴ for his factes, fight, fortitude, and fame,
He well deserues⁵ an euerlasting name.

7.

At such a time and place is vertue tryde,
When manhood may both Prince and countrey please,
But such a brunt the valiant will abide,
And bende their force to worke their countrey's ease :
They thinke no trauayle loſte, by land, or Seas,
But venture fortune, goods, life, landes and heale,
To fight it out for Prince and publique weale.

8.

You that haue heard or read the worthie factes
Of *Nennius* here, (though⁶ rudely pende by mee)
Learne so to fight, let so your⁷ noble actes
By those that after come, recounted bee :
I may full well reioyce he spake to mee,
For if I had not stayde to heare him then,
I thinke he scarce had come to speake agen.⁸

⁷ Which graunted, al they vanisht. ed. 1575.

⁸ On this in traunce I lay me thought a while
And musde reioysing. ib.

¹ Knight. ib.

² Playne. ib.

³ Whose vertues so did passe. ib.

⁴ As. ib.

⁵ Deseruede. ib.

⁶ So. ib.

⁷ And let your. ib.

⁸ The remainder of "the Authour" from the first edition.

But let me nowc retourne againe to tell,
What after this, me chaunst to see and heare.

9.

But next me thought appeared plaine in sight
 A noble Lorde, which once had lost his head,
 Of person tall, well set, a comely wight,

I trust yee Readers like my dealing well,
 In promise that I made, this later yeare.
 For sure I thinke, a man farre better were
 Not speaks at all, to promese hilles of gold,
 And in performance, waxe as key full colde.

I saide (if God sent time, and space therfore)
 Ye should receaue from mee (as leysure came)
 Of these my simple toyles, a greater store,
 And partly you perceauē, how I performe the same.
 Such workes, as this my simple muse can frame,
 (With all my harte and minde) you freely haue:
 As free, as God these giftes me frely gaue.

Wherefore giue eare, now harken well to this:
 As to these tunes, I gaue me thought some heede,
 In doubte if sences led my mynde amisse,
 Or whether *παθος* me with toyes did feede.
 What doth (said Morpheus) now this musing nede?
 Art thou so farre orewatcht, thy wittes the fayle?
 Or els do fancies more then wit preuayle?

Not so (quoth I) though far the night be past,
 And yet me thinkes, I could be well content
 To leaue them so (if this were now the last)
 So thou therto and Somnus sweete consent:
 This noble Nennius well the time hath spent.

I would haue staide, if he had spoken more:
 'Twas his departure, troubled me so sore.

(Quoth he) thou must a while yet longer byde:
 In fewe he shall declare, how he hath sped
 That commes. And euen with that I lookt aside,
 And sawe a coarse approache without a head.
 What now (quoth I) though erste (by thee) the dead
 Were causde to speake, declaring all their will,
 Yet speach of headlesse men doth passe my skill.

With that gan Morpheus touch him with his mace,
 And sodainly an head, on shoulders pight.
 For lacke of vse, he could not turne his face,
 Or else had Morpheus scarcely set it right.
 He had forgotten eke, to turne his sight:
 But still he stode his face to set awrye,
 And wappering turnid vp his white of eye.

Whome proude despite aliue to slaughter lead :
 Thus wise he wilde me penne how earst he spead,
 Perswading me, perdy, to write agen
 His fall, amongst the *Britayne* noble men.

As t'were a dead man, reared vp an end,
 Deuoyde of life, and yet a feeling had :
 His lippes lay open, grimly ofte hee grend :
 With hollowe eyes, full oft he frowned sad,
 And bent his browes, and lookte as he were mad :
 I sawe not in my life, I thinke his pere :
 Nor shall not, if I liue this hundred yeare.

At length he tryde, which way to tell his mynde :
 Yet how to speake his tonge had quite forgotte :
 Each instrument forgotten had his kinde,
 That erste could run at randon and by roate,
 But then me thought, with fist his brest hee smote,
 The other hande his musing browes did holde :
 And as awakte (at laste) this tale he tolde.

Howe the Lord Irenglas cosen to king

Cassibellane was slayne by the Lord Elimine cosen

to *Androgeus Earle of London*, about the

yeere before Christ,

51.

1.

AMONGST the rest that whilome sate aloft,
 Amongst the rest, that once had happie chaunce,
 Amongst the rest, that had good Fortune oft,
 Amongst the rest, that coulde themselues aduaunce,
 Amongst the rest, that led in warres the staunce,¹
 And wanne the palme, the prayse, renowne, and fame,
 [(Yet after fell in prooffe to trye the same)]
 Leaue in thy booke a place to put my name.

2.

[Which, *Higgins*, if thou shalt, and write therein
 This tale I tell, no doubt thou shalt me please;
 Thy selfe likewise thereby maist profit win;
 For why, who writes such histories as these,
 Doth often bring the Readers hearts such ease,
 And² when they sitte, and see what he doth note,
 And lessons learne to saue his³ armour coate,
 Well fare his heart (say they) this worke that wrote.

3.

Perhaps thou answer wilt and eke confesse,
 They may in deede giue thanks, and that is all:
 They can (saist thou) I thinke giue scarcely lesse,
 For such a gifte a guerdon farre too small:
 Well, yet doe write, content thy selfe withall,
 Thou must the ende that God appoyntes abide:

¹ Daunce. N.

² As. ed. 1575.

³ Their. ib.

Though they ingratefull be of reason wide,
Thou must not therefore this thy talent hide.

4.

This I object not that I thinke is so,
But if it erst haue chaunced so to hitte,
Thou shouldst not therefore let these stories go,
Which may perchaunce so exercise thy witte,
And may so frame thy phrases fine and fitte,
Though now no other gifte then thanks thou haue :
Yet shall thy verses liue, thy name to saue,
And spread thy prayse, when thou art layde in graue.

5.

But sure I thinke among so great a sort,
As shall thy workes and writinges chaunce to see,
Of courtzy all thou canst not finde them short,
But some must needes consider well of thee :
Though some doe pinche and saue, to thriue and thie,
And some doe polle and pill to get the pelfe,
And some haue layde vp all on leeing shelve,
Yet some will well consider of thy selfe.

6.

I had almost stept in with thee so farre,
To bid thee wryte and register my name,
(Because I fearde of late the *Romayne* warre
Thou wrotste, had ended all thy former frame,
And I had beene excluded from the same)
That now I feare I wery thee with talke,
While from my purpose farre aloofe I stalke,
In steed of choyse, for cheese to giue thee chalke.]⁴

7.

Wherefore I will be brieve, and tell thee all
My minde, the cause why I doe now appeare.⁵

⁴ Insteede of cheese to fill thy chaps with chalke. ed. 1575.

⁵ I will be brieve and truly tell thee all

The cause why I from graue do now appeare. N.

I will recite to thee my sodayne fall,
 And what in life mine exercises were :
 To which since I doe see thee set thine eare,
 Marke now my tale, and beare it well away,
 Marke what mee brought so sodayne in decaye,
 [And marke of lusty life the vnstable staye.]

8.

Let who so stands trust to a stedfast holde,
 (Yf hee suppose hee may a steedy finde)
 And then hee neede not stagger when hee nolde,
 As I and others calde agayne to minde :
 But trust not Fortune, shee is counted blinde,⁶

To prayse her pranks occasion giues no cause :
 Doe wisely, or you prayse her take the pause,
 [Else may you proue your selues at length but dawes.]

9.

Some loue to boast what fortune they haue had,
 Some other blame misfortune theyrs as fast,
 Some tell of fortunes there bee good and bad,
 Some fooles of fortune make themselues agast,
 Some shewe of fortune comming, present, past,

And say there is a fate that ruleth all :
 But sure it seemes theyr wisdom is but small,
 [To talke so much of Lady Fortune's ball.]

10.

No fortune is so bad our selues ne frame,⁷
 There is no chaunce at all hath vs preseru'd,
 There is no fate whom wee haue neede to blame,
 There is no destiny but is deseru'd,

⁶ Let who so stands trust to a stedfast hold,
 If stedfast hold he thinke that he may find,
 Presume not on thy strength, nay yet be bold
 On Fortune's gifts, nay let her guide thy mind
 In hope of hap, for she is counted blind. N.

⁷ So bad but we it frame. N.

No lucke that leaues vs safe or vnpreseru'd :

Let vs not then complayne of Fortune's skill,
For all our good descends from God's good will,
[And of our lewdnes springeth all our ill.]

11.

If so a man might stay on Fortune's holde,
Or else on Prince, as pillar of defence,
Then might my selfe t'haue done⁸ the same bee bolde,
In euery perill, purpose, or pretence :

Cassibellane as much as any Prince,

Lou'd mee his cosin⁹ *Irenglas* by name,
Both for my feats in armes, and fauour, fame,¹
[And for because I of his linage came.]

12.

I came (by parents) of his regall race,
Liude happy dayes (if happy mortall bee)
Had (as I sayd) his fauour, bare the grace,
I was his loyall seruant² franke and free,
But what of this at all preuayled mee ?

Yet furthermore the feates of armes I knew,
I fought in field, when mighty *Cæsar* flewe,
[And of the *Romaynes* came my part I slewe.]

13.

Shall I for this prayse Fortune ought at all ?
Did Fortune ought in this ? no whit bee sure :³
Or shall I blame her after for my fall,
That neuer could mee any hurte procure ?

T'was glory vayne did sweetely mee allure,
Wherefore giue eare, and then with pen disclose
[A tale which (though but rudely I dispose)
Who reades and heares it both, may pleasure those.⁴]

⁸ To done. ed. 1575.

⁹ Nephewe. ib.

¹ For feates in armes, for fauour, and for fame. N.

² Nephew. ed. 1575.

³ No, no, be sure. ib.

⁴ How seeming friends did prooue my chiefest foes. N.

14.

Full happy were our Countrey men that dy'd,
 And⁵ noble *Nennius*, in the field wee⁶ fought :
 When first both *Britaynes*, and the *Romaynes* tryd
 With dint of sword, if titles theyrs were ought :
 They dyed in theyr defence, no pompe they sought,
 They liu'd to see their Countrey conquere still,
 They dy'd before they felt of priuate ill,
 [And bare eache other all their liues, good will.]

15.

When *Cæsar* so with shamefull flight recoyl'd,
 And left our *Britayne* land vnconquer'd first,
 Which only thought our Realme and vs t'haue spoyl'd,
 Wee came to see (of all our field the worst)
 Our souldiers slayne. O cruell *Cæsar* curst
 (Quoth wee) should all these giltlesse *Britaynes* die⁷
 [For thine ambition ? fie, O *Cæsar*, fie,]
 That durst not⁸ byde but like a dastard flie.

16.

But then to see them in aray to lie,
 And for to see them wounded all before,
 Not one but in his place his life did trye,
 To see the *Romaynes* bloudy backes that bore
 In field, flight, dead, and scattered⁹ on the shore,
 What thousand tongues (thinke you) could tell our ioy !¹
 This made our hartes reuiue, this pleas'd our *Roy*,²
 [And wee lesse fearde our enemies all annoy.]

17.

With trompets mourning tune, and wayling cries,
 And drummes, and fluits, and shawmes, wee sound adieu,

⁵ As. N.⁶ That. N.⁷ Quoth we, by thee did all these Britaines die. N.⁸ Yet darst not. ed. 1575.⁹ Their wounds in flight all scattered. N.¹ Tongues ioy to light could bring. N.² Our king. N.

And for our friends wee watred all our [weeping] eyes,
As loth to leese the liues of such a [noble] crew:
To th'earth wee bare them all in order dew,
According vnto each man's noble name,
And as their byrth requirde and worthy fame,
[Euen so to honour them, with herce wee came.]

18.

Of noble triumphes after was no spare,
Wee *Britaynes* erst were neuer halfe so glad,
That so wee made the *Romaynes* hence to fare,
No tongue can tell the harty ioyes wee had:
Wee were therewith so myrry mooded mad,³
Our fingers tickled still, which came from fight,
Wee had before our eyes our enmyes flight,⁴
[And nought was seemely then but warlike might.]⁵

19.

So fares it when the meaner giue the spoyle,
And make the mighty all theyr force reuoke:
So fares it when great victours feeble the foyle,
And meaner sorts of count doe giue the stroke,⁶
That pearceth euen the hardest harte of oke,
For where the weaker win the wage of fame,
[And stronger leese their wonted noble name,]
The victours harts a thousand ioyes enflame.

20.

A Iusting then proclaymed was for those,
That turneis⁷ would approatch themselues trye,
Amongst vs *Britaynes* (not agaynst our foes)
Tweene th'Earle of *London's* cosin stout and I:
And both the partes wee both could make, perdy,
To winne the price, the prayse, the pompe consent,

³ Therewith for battaile bent as mad. N.

⁴ Our foes foule flight. N.

⁵ Seemely there but swordes in sight. ed. 1575.

⁶ And men lesse deem'd do giue the conquering stroke. N.

⁷ (And turneys.) ed. 1575.

And eke the fame of former warres wee ment,
But foolish was the end of our intent.⁸

21.

For why, when glory vayne stirres men to strife,
When hope of prayse prouokes them once to ire,
Then they at all regard no goods nor life,
From faithfull frendship rudely they retire,
They are so set with glorie's gloze on fire,
That quite they rule and reason wrest awrye,
They turne away their friendly fawting eye,⁹
[And others eache, as fixed foes defie.]

22.

O God that workest all the wonders wrought,
(And hast the powre to turne the hartes aliue)
Graunt grace to those that labour so for nought
But flitting fame, and titles hauty striue:
Let not ambition so the Earth depriue
Of worthy wightes, giue them some better grace,
That they may run for Countrey's weale their race,
[And not their bloud with braynsicke brawles debace.]

23.

Let them not breake the bond of frendly loue
In broyles of bate, but frendly faults redresse,
Let not them so their manhood seeke to proue
By priuate hate, to worke their owne distresse,
So shall they neede their enemies feare¹ the lesse:
Perdy, foule forayne² foes themselues they make,

³ The stanza thus altered by Niccols.

A solemne iusts proclaimed was for those,
Who would to win renowne their valour trie,
Where th'earle of London's cosin did expose
Himselfe to purchase praise, against whom I
To win the prize did all my powers applie:
But fatall was the scope I did intend,
Th'effects bewray'd my folly in the end.

⁹ Fawting eye. ed. 1575. i. e. favouring eye. Their former friendly eie. N.

¹ Their foes to feare. N.

² Friends worse then forren. N.

That in their Countrey, for vayne quarells sake,³
[Doe dare in hand reuenging weapons take.]

24.

But what neede I on those alieue to stay,
They haue examples good before their eyes,
By which (if they haue grace) beware they may,
The happiest men by others harmes are wise :
Let them not then our warning wordes despise,
Doe will them wisely of these thinges debate,
For why, the foolishe aye the⁴ warning hate,
[Are neuer wise, or, had I wist, to late.]⁵

25.

[Perhaps thou thinkste to long a time I stay,
And from that I proposed erst digresse,
Because that here (as it were by the way)
For warning's sake, my conscience I professe :
Yet for my breache of compasse blame mee lesse,
In talke, sith that thou come to heare mee art,
Which seeme (as woemen vse) to reme my hart,
Before I come to open all my smart.]

26.

Wee spent the day in iusting (as I sayd,)
Appoynted erst among our selues before,
And all the feates of armes in field we playd,
Æneas taught our auncestours of yore,
What neede I fill thine eares with talking more,
My men and I had put those feates in vre,
And hee likewise (but nothing yet so sure,)
[Which did, at length, my haplesse end procure.]

27.

For as with fortune still I gaue the foyle,
To him that thought the glory all to haue,

³ That fall at oddes for fond vaine glorie's sake. N.

⁴ That. ed. 1575.

⁵ Wise before it be to late. ed. 1575.

When hee perceau'd hee could not keepe the coyle,
Nor yet with equall match himselfe to saue,
Occasion of dissention great hee gaue:

In stead of iest hee offred earnest play,
In lieu of sport hee spite did still⁶ display,
[In stead of myrth, both malice and decay.]

28.

The traytour vile, the tyraunt (so hee prou'd)
With coward, canker'd, hatefull, hasty ire,
And caytife dealing, shewde how mee hee⁷ lou'd,
When as hee could not to his hope aspire,
To winne the prayse of triumph, his desire,
Hee chalengde mee, and here began the broyle,
He thought with banding braue to keepe the coyle,
[Or else with flatts and facings mee to foyle.]

29.

And that because the⁸ iudgment fauourde mee,
[Perdy,] report almost of all the route,⁹
Ran still that I was worthy praysde to bee,
And often times they gaue mee all a shoute:
This made mine enmies stare¹ and looke aboute,
And often wish them euill aloude that cryde,
Such is the nature still of naughty pryde,
[Can nothing worse² then cthers prayse abyde.]

30.

Wee twayne (quoth hee) betwene our selues will try
Alone our manhoods both, if thou consent:
Wee ought not breake the Prince his peace, quoth I,
His grace would not therewith bee well³ content,
And sith no hurt was here nor malice ment,
You ought not so on choller take it ill,

⁶ Did foule display. ed. 1575.⁷ He me. ib.⁸ Mens. N.⁹ The common rout. N.¹ Made my foes to stare. N.² Nothing lesse. ed. 1575.³ Not be well therewith. ib.

Though I to win the price put forth my skill,
[But for my Knighthoode beare⁴ mee more good will.]

31.⁵

With that quoth *Elenine* (for so hee hight,)
That was the Earle his cosin, then⁶ my foe,
I meane (quoth hee) to try the case in fight,
Before thou passe againe my presence froe,⁷
And euen with that hee raught to mee⁸ a bloe :
My friends nor I could⁹ not this wrong abide,
Wee drewe,¹ and so did those on th'other side
[That fearcely² fought, and other each defide.]

⁴ But rather therfore beare. ed. 1575.

⁵ Here the following stanzas occur in the first edition.

To which he aunswerd as despite had spoke,
With hasty wordes and tauntes of hygher peres.
I list not any iote (quoth he) reuoke,
Of that is sayd, ne darste thou for thine eares
(What euer looks in place thy fauters beares)
Alone to mete me in the field to fraye.
But I may hap (by chaunce) to finde the day,
Wherein thou shalt not beare the price away.

As for the king we doubt if he be heyre,
The kingdome is the Earle of London's right,
And though that he the prince his person beare
(In his nonage) he ought not reue it quyte,
Ne shall he stay mee if I mynde to fighte.

Then where thou speakst (quoth he) of princes peace,
And wouldst me warne, from furder dealing seace :
Thou better were (perhaps) to holde thy peace.

On which I playnly sayde, highe treason t'was,
So much to speake, against our soueraigne Lorde:
Quoth I, the boundes of modestie you passe,
That dare your case with prince his right accorde :
Your betters would far better wordes auorde,
And you perhaps your selfe so stoute that showe
Which make as though you sought his ouerthrowe,
Shall shortly more his grace his pleasure knowe.

⁶ And. ed. 1575.

⁷ Thyselſe a traytour rather ſeſt right,
That darſte preſume amongſt thy betters ſo. ib.

⁸ I raught to him. ib.

⁹ My frendes likewyſe could. ib.

¹ They drew. ib.

² We freſhly. ib.

32.

But I was all the marke whereat hee³ shotte,
 The malice still hee⁴ meant to none but mee,
 At mee hee⁵ cast, and drewe mee for the lotte,
 Which should of all reuenge the ransom bee:
 Wherefore hee set them at mee francke⁶ and free,
 Till mee they tooke, so compast rounde aboute,
 As I coule not scape from among them out:
 [Was neuer Lord⁷ betrayde with such a route.]

33.

To make it short: I singled was therefore,
 Euen as the Dere to finde his fatall stroke:
 I could not scape, in numbre they were more,
 My pageaunt was in presence there bespoke:³
 A pillowe they prepared mee of oke,
 My hands they bounde, along my corps they led,
 From of my shoulders quite they stroke my head,
 [And with my death theyr cruell eyes they fed.]

³ They. ed. 1575.⁴ Was. ib.⁵ They. ib.⁶ Wherefore they layde about them francke. ib.⁷ Knight. ib.

⁸ Several of the early historians concur in representing that this improvident quarrell, and unexpected rencounter, first enabled Cæsar to establish his landing in Britain, from the assistance afterwards given him by the Earl of London. The following is one of the briefest of the statements:—"It befell thus vpon a day that the gentylmen of the kynges housholde and the gentylmen of the Erle's housholde of London after meet, went togyder for to play. And thurgh debate that arose ymonge them Enelin, that was the Erle's cosyn of London, slewe Irenglas that was the kynges cosyn. Wherefore the kyng swore that Enelyn sholde be hanged. But the Erle of London, that was Enelin's lorde, wolde not suffer hym. Wherefore the kyng was greatly wroth and vexed towarde the Erle and thought hym to dystroye. And pryuely the Erle sende letters to Julius Cezar, that he sholde come into this lande for to helpe hym, and hym auenge vpon the kyng, and he wolde helpe hym with al his myght. And whan the emperour herde these tydynges he was full glad, and ordeyned a stronge power, and came agayne the thyrde tyme into this lande, and the Erle of London helped hym with viii M. men. And at the thyrde tyme was Cassybolon ouercome and dyscomfyted, and made peas to the Emperour for thre thousande pounce of syluer, yeldyng by yere for truage for this lande for euermore." *Chron. of St. Albans.*

34.

If euer man that seru'd his Prince with payne,
And well deserued of his publike weal :
If euer Knight esteemde it greatest gayne,
For Prince and Countrey in the warres to deale :
My selfe was such, which venterde life and heale
At all assayes, to saue my natine soyle,
With all my labour, trauayle, payne and toyle,
[Both from the force of foes and foraine foyle.]

35.

Yet heere you see, at home I had my fall,
Not by my fearcest foes that came in warre,
But by my friend I gate this griping thrall,
When folly framde vs both at home to iarre.
Oh that my Countrey man^s should raunge so farre,
From wisdomes way, to wedde himselfe to will,
From reason's rule, to wrest his wittes to ill,
[From friendship fast, his dearest friend to kill!]

36.

Well, bid the rest beware of triumphes such,
Bid them beware for titles vaine to striue,
Bid them not trust such sullayne friends to much,
Did them not so theyr honours high achieue :
For if they will preserue theyr names aliue,
There is no better way to worke the same
Then to eschue of tyranny defame :
[Meeke clemency deserues a noble name.]⁹

⁸ Oh that my friend of yore. N.

⁹ The edition of 1575 finishes with the life of Lord Irenglas, which Higgins calls the FIRST PART in his concluding lines of

THE AUTHOR.

With that (me thought) he vanisht quite away :
And I was come to end my worke at last :
Not minding longer on the which to staye,
My penne did trudge to wryte these verses fast.
I trust sith once, they haue the Printer past

S

That went before : these fragmentes come behinde,
Shall of the Readers, likewyse fauour finde.

So of my first part here I make an ende,
The Seconde parte which I haue now to fyle
Doth call me hence, from these to those to wende :
In which if God send grace to guyde my style,

I shall (I trust) and that in shorter whyle,
Againe retourne, to Printers presse with those :
Which shal likewise, their fight and falles disclose.

Till then farewell a thousand times to thee,
Which takst in hand this booke to shun the ill,
That was the fall of these describde by mee,
And haste to mende their faultes a firme good will,
I wishe thy health, increase of vertu still,
Adieu farewell, I haue but this to say,
God send vs both his heauenly grace for aye.

L. Higgins.



Postscript.

THE little expectation entertained by the Editors of the **BRITISH BIBLIOGRAPHER** of the present abrupt termination of their work, cannot be more convincingly shown than by their having undertaken the very complicated and laborious task of forming a complete edition of *the Mirrour for Magistrates*, which, in the common proportionate distribution of their periodical numbers, could not have been finished in less than three years. Their wishes to have made their plan more perfect are expressed in another place; and it remains only to supply such information as appears material as to the preceding pages of *the Mirror for Magistrates*. In expectation of completing a reprint of all the parts, the Editors commenced with the performance of JOHN HIGGINS, not with any preference as to merit, but for the purpose of arranging the whole of the lives in Chronological order. The Part first published was written by WILLIAM BALDWIN and his associates, and published in 1559. To that succeeded the publication of John Higgins in 1575, whose lives being selected from earlier periods of the English history than those in Baldwin's collection, obtained thereby precedence upon the two parts being afterwards united.

The preceding pages terminate with the life of *Irenglass* according to the original edition by Higgins; but the text is from the edition of 1587, being the last edited by him; and there are now first added as well the variations from the first edition, as of that printed by Richard Niccols in 1610. The same reason that influences the termination of *the British Bibliographer* will prevent a continuance of *the Mirror for Magistrates* in octavo, and the two works now form our fourth and last volume.

The Editors however do not shrink from their project, and a limited number of copies of the *Mirror for Magistrates*, having, according to the original plan, been taken off in quarto, they, from a wish to see the work completed, have been induced to listen to the invitation of persons no way concerned with the present undertaking, to continue and complete that impression, which will, therefore, be published in the course of the ensuing year.

J. H. Hasted

Dec. 28, 1813.



END OF THE FOURTH AND LAST VOLUME.

Higgins, John

The mirour for magistrates wherein may be seene, by examples passed in
this realme with how greenous plagues vices are punished in great Princes
and Magistrates and how fraile and anstable wordly prosperity found etc

[London] [1813]

P.o.angl. 157

urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10746770-5